

# 601 Determined San Zemin...

The news of Lu Qiang's death had been spread everywhere. The one person was the happiest one and he was in the mood of the celebration.

Sitting in his study room in the Xi residence, Xi Cheng instructed his assistant who was there to give all the updates of the situation to his boss.

"Get me a drink," Xi Cheng ordered and the assistant nodded.

Picking up his cellphone from the table, Xi Cheng made a call. "Finally, we got success. Mr. Victor."

"It was not what I wanted," the cold voice came out.

"I know, but no one can predict the intensity of the situation and things turn into something else," Xi Cheng countered.

"I didn't want him to die. Dying is the easy way out. I wanted him to be half dead so that the person can feel its pain." Victor spoke again.

"I am sorry but things....."

"You changed the plan on your own when clearly it was not what I asked you to do," the man interrupted Xi Cheng.

"I tried to make it more effective as there were chances that it might fail and later we had to bear the consequences. If Lu Qiang had made it alive out from it, then it would not only be bad for me but also, you would have to take your steps back from the Chinese market and your business wouldn't be able to make it in China ever."

Though Xi Cheng explained his side, the man was not ready to listen. "You broke the rule by deciding on your own, and it would be difficult to trust you in the future. There won't be any business between you and me."

Saying, the man cut the call leaving Xi Cheng speechless but Xi Cheng was not sad.

"Never mind Mr. Victor. As the thorn in my way is out now, we can meet in the future soon and at that time, you will come to me on your own. Also, thank you for helping me to get him out of my life and this world."

A burst of loud laughter could be heard in the study room, which stopped when the assistant brought the drinks for him.

Taking the sip of drink from the glass and gulping it down while savoring its bitterness thoroughly, Xi Cheng spoke, "Rest in peace, President Lu."

--

In the Ming Mansion...

When they got the news, it shocked everyone. Elder Ming wanted to go and see his friend and his granddaughter as soon as possible. They had to wait as the hospital was dealing with the sudden security problem and the media people. They could finally make it in the evening.

Excusing herself, Zhang Jei called her brother when she was still in the home. "Did you see the news?"

"Yes sister," Zhang Wei replied.

"Just tell me if you and my son are involved in it or not," Zhang Jei ordered in a cold voice.

"I already told you, sister, I don't have any intention to harm him and I am as much as surprised as you," Zhang Wei countered.

"Where is Ming Rusheng? Is he involved in it?" she asked, ignoring his explanation.

"He is sleeping in his room and I don't think he is involved in it or he would be awake till now to get the news."

"I don't know if you are telling the truth or not, but if both of you are involved, I will personally put you both behind the bars. Mark my words." Saying Zhang Jei cut the call.

Ming Rusheng woke up and the moment he checked his cellphone, it was filled with so many missed calls and the messages. He was drunk the previous night, so he woke up late.

Checking the messages on the mobile, he went to the living room where his uncle just hung up the call after talking to Zhang Jei.

"Uncle, what's going on? Is someone playing a prank or what?" asked Ming Rusheng while going through the news in the cell phone and trying to clear his vision and shake his head again and again, which was hurting with a hangover.

"It's the truth, Ming Rusheng," Zhang Wei replied and it surprised Ming Rusheng.

"I think I am still too drunk that I am seeing and hearing things," Ming Rusheng said as he pressed his temples but ignoring him, Zhang Wei asked, "Are you involved in this, Ming Rushen?"

Chuckling Ming Rusheng spoke, "Me? If I was, then do you think I would sleep like this and hear the news from others? Wouldn't I be celebrating the victory?"

Zhang Wei gave him a cold look, so Ming Rushen spoke, "I wish him to disappear, but I didn't think to kill him. It's up to you whether you want to trust me or not."

"Did you meet Xi Cheng behind my back?" Zhang Wei asked as he didn't trust Ming Rusheng.

"Do I need to tell you everything, uncle? I am not a kid now. Anyway, it's sad that he died as I wished to give him tough competition but seems like there is nothing to compete now."

"I know you met him," Zhang Wei declared.

"If you already know it, then why ask me? Didn't your spies tell you everything?" Saying Ming Rusheng went back to his room, leaving Zhang Jei with so many questions.

---

On the other hand, San Zemin was busy investing the things from his side. He knew the truth, but he wanted to gather the

proof which could put the culprit behind the bars. He knew it would not be easy as there were powerful people behind it who had the ability to twist and turn the things.

Even after he gathered all the proof, he needed someone powerful from the Lu family who could deal with the things with the power and there was only one person after Lu Qiang and he was struggling with life and death, Chairman Lu Jinhai.

San Zemin decided to wait until the situation in the family comes to normal and till the moment when someone in the family takes Lu Qiang's position. He was so determined to punish the culprit that he swore on his life, if in the end the culprits couldn't get punished, he will kill them on his own without thinking about the consequences he had to face later.

—

As readers asked me, so this is a surprise bonus chapter early morning...

## 602 I Need To Go To Him...

In the night, when everyone fell asleep and it was silence everywhere, Nixxxie went to Jiang Yang. She couldn't get the chance to talk to him the whole day as he was busy with his work and she was busy looking after others.

Nixxxie entered his cabin without knocking on the door, thinking he must be resting and she might disturb him. Jiang Yang was sitting in his chair while leaning back in it with his eyes closed.

She went to him but didn't disturb him. Making sure he was sleeping, she turned to leave, but Jiang Yang held her hand. He sensed her presence the moment she entered the room and when she was observing him while standing in front of him just a few inches away; he was aware of it too.

Jiang Yang kept looking at her as if she was what he needed at that moment.

Nixxxie didn't know what to say to him as no word felt right to console him. The whole day he was just working like crazy, but not even once she saw him crying. 'How hard it must be to act strong when you are in pain', she thought.

Not saying anything, Nixxxie went closer. Caressing his hair and cheeks with the care she hugged him, she was standing and he was sitting in his chair. Jiang Yang hugged her back while burying his face in her chest like a kid and she asked, "Are you okay?"

He shook her head as saying he was not okay. That caring hug from her gave him a feeling of peace, but at the same time, it made him burst into tears. Only he knew how he controlled himself all the time, but in front of Nixxxie he could let himself go.

Nixxxie let him cry without saying a word to console him. He cried like a child as if what he held back the whole day burst out at once. Seeing him crying, Nixxxie couldn't hold back her

tears too and she felt sad that there was nothing that she could do for him other than letting him cry.

Once he was calm, Jiang Yang let go of her and Nixxie wiped his tears. She passed him a water bottle from his table.

Accepting it, he quietly drank the water and said nothing for long.

"You should rest as tomorrow you have to work again," she suggested and he nodded but he continued sitting in the chair.

Seeing, he had no intention of sleeping, Nixxie held his hand to make him get up from the chair and took him inside the room. She took off his white apron and signaled him to lie down on the bed. As he did it, she covered him with the quilt.

"I will take leave as I have to go back to your mother."

"How is mom, now?" He asked, lying down in bed.

"She cried a lot after knowing Yuyan was expecting. Sleep now as they need you as a doctor tomorrow." Instructing, Nixxie got up to turn off the light and then to leave, but Jiang Yang held her hand to stop her.

"I don't want to be alone," he said, looking at her.

Nixxie could understand his condition as she was the same when her mother was admitted in the hospital and she needed someone to handle her. Though she acted so strongly just as Jiang Yang was doing the whole day, Jiang Yang's way of comforting her at that time made her feel better.

Nodding lightly, she lied down beside him on the bed and hugged him. Jiang Yang fell asleep soon holding her as if he was a kid and she felt relieved to feel his even breathing which showed that he was sleeping soundly.

---

Lu Han came to Lu Mansion with a cremation urn, which police handed him over. He didn't have the courage to mention it to anyone and decided to keep it at home for the time being.

Lu Feng was home while discussing Lu Lijun with An Tian and they saw Lu Han holding something in his hand and that something was really hurting.

Lu Han went to Lu Feng, his eyes teary. Seeing the thing in his hands, it didn't take time for Lu Feng and An Tian to shed tears.

"I don't know what to do. I- I don't have the courage to show it to anyone."

Saying Lu Han broke into the tears. Lu Feng took the urn from his hands and carried it to Lu Qiang's room on the second floor. He kept it at his study table, where Lu Qiang spent most of his time in the room.

---

The next day, everyone was waiting for Jiang Yuyan and Lu Jinhai to show some improvement in their conditions, but they got disappointed in the return. Jiang Yuyan regained her consciousness in between, but it was just for a few seconds when she ended up mumbling Lu Qiang's name while shedding tears and fell unconscious again.

"Till when will this continue? When would she wake up?" Jiang Peizhi asked Jiang Yang.

"Right now she is still in shock. It's better for her to keep sleeping or she will just cry and scream. It's not good as she just had surgery on her head," Jiang Yang replied.

Jiang Peizhi agreed to what his son said and asked, "Did you know she was pregnant?"

"Hmm!"

"Did she....."

"She got to know about it just the day before the accident." Jiang Yang knew what his father would ask.

Hearing it, Jiang Peizhi felt sadder for his daughter. All the bad things were happening with her at the same time and thought, for what kind of sin God was punishing her.

In the evening, finally, Jiang Yuyan woke up. Seeing the movement, the nurse called Jiang Yang. When Jiang Yang arrived, Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her teary eyes as she tried to get up, but there was no energy left inside her to even move comfortably.

Jiang Yang held her at shoulder, "Don't move,"

She didn't give up and said, "B- Brother, I need to go to him.  
He must be in pain."



## 603 Why Am I Bleeding?

"Yuyan, please. Don't move," Jiang Yang pleaded.

As Jiang Yuyan had no energy left to move or struggle more, she lied down in the bed helplessly, her eyes desperate to see him, the one she lost but didn't want to believe it, thinking it was just a bad dream.

She closed her eyes, the corners of her eyes letting the tears find their way out, she said, "Brother, tell me it was just a nightmare and everything would be fine."

Jiang Yang wanted to say it was not a nightmare and Lu Qiang is dead but couldn't say it considering her condition. "Yuyan, don't talk and rest for now. You are weak and it will harm you more."

"Brother...please tell me it's a nightmare...please....," she pleaded, ignoring everything, her pain, her brother's words.

Tears rolled down from Jiang Yang's eyes and he finally said, "It was not a nightmare, Yuyan." He didn't want to comfort her with a lie.

Hearing it, she broke into a loud cry and Jiang Yang sat there helplessly seeing her cry.

She opened her eyes to look at him and said, "Brother, you always gave me whatever I want."

Jiang Yang nodded, knowing what she would ask him and she spoke. "Bring him back to me. I can't live without him..please bring him back..."

"I-I am sorry, Yuyan, but this time your brother is helpless. I can't give you what you want."

Both continued crying while Jiang Yang held her hand to console her.

Their parents were watching it from the outside of the door and didn't gather the courage to enter inside. Mo Ruolan finally decided to go to her daughter, but Jiang Peizhi stopped

her as Mo Ruolan was crying and it won't be of any help. He knew only Jiang Yang could handle his daughter.

In a while, Jiang Yuyan spoke as if she accepted the reality, "I couldn't even tell him that he would be a father soon."

Jiang Yang held his breath with the mention of a baby, thinking his sister would get another shock if she realized the baby was no more with her now.

"How happy he would have been." Saying it while sobbing and in her broken and crying voice, Jiang Yuyan moved her other hand to touch her belly as Jiang Yang held another one.

She touched her belly and said, "It's hurting here?" and the sudden realization hit her. Looking at her brother with puzzled sight, she asked, "How is the baby?"

Her eyes having a fear of something she wouldn't want to hear.

Jiang Yang didn't know what to say, "Yuyan....." the latter words choked in his throat.

Jiang Yuyan felt a cramp in her lower belly and closed her eyes because of pain just to ask, "W-Why am I bleeding?"

Jiang Yang just looked at his sister helplessly, and she understood what was the reason. She lost her baby too. She could do nothing but cry over it.

Jiang Yang controlled himself and signaled the nurse to get the medicines for Jiang Yuyan, as crying for long was not good for her. The nurse knew what medicine Jiang Yang asked for and brought it.

When Jiang Yang injected the medicine in her body, Jiang Yuyan spoke. "Brother, give me medicine which will make me sleep forever."

What she said hurt Jiang Yang. with his teary eyes he caressed her cheeks with his hand and said, "Sleep," and the next moment she closed her eyes as the medicine started its work.

Lu Feng was dealing with Lu Lijun's problem to find out the solution along with An Tian. He got to know about Jiang Yuyan when Jiang Yang called him to enquire about Lu Lijun.

"How is she, Jiang Yang?" Lu Feng asked.

"Don't ask."

"Hmm! I can imagine."

"Why don't you come to see her?" Jiang Yang suggested.

"I told you, I can't dare to face her and I won't show her my face ever," Lu Feng declared, his chest felt heavy as he thought about her crying and sobbing.

"She needs our support, Lu Feng."

"Seeing me will just remind her about what happened at that time."

Jiang Yang didn't force him. Next few days Jiang Yuyan's physical health was improving, but mentally she was unstable. The thing that worried Jiang Yang was she was unusually silent. She used to cry sometimes, but sometimes she looks like she was thinking about something while sometimes she looked like her mind was blank.

They had sent grandpa and Ning Jiahui back home while Lu Chen and Lu Han were dealing with other things such as the chaos that occurred in the Lu corporation because of the sudden disaster of Lu Qiang's death. The value of shares went down and it looked like in trouble in the same way when it happened at the time of Lu Jinhai's accident in the past.

The family members had been informed about the cremation urn which was to be taken to their ancestral town where they had the cemetery where ancestors of the family were buried and as per the rule, Lu Qiang's ashes should be buried there too. They decided to wait till Jiang Yuyan and Lu Jinhai wake up.

Lu Lijun's condition was worsening day by day. Initially, he at least responded when the water and food were offered to him and he ate it, but for a few days, he stopped it too. After eating a few bites, he stopped opening his mouth, refusing to eat further. he started to look weak and it was impossible to force him to eat more. He had been provided nutrients through the IV drip, but it was not enough.

After almost ten days in the night when Lu Lijun was asleep, Lu Feng came to the hospital to check on his uncle by asking Lu Han and An Tian to keep watch on him. He thought to at least take one look at Jiang Yuyan from a distance to know how she was doing.

He went to Jiang Yang who never left the hospital since the day of the accident. When they were discussing Lu Jinhai's serious condition, the nurse came to Jiang Yang's cabin.

"Doctor Jiang Yang, Mrs. Lu is missing," she said catching her breath as she looked scared.

# 604 Wait For Me, Lu Qiang...

"Mrs. Lu is missing," the nurse informed.

"What?" Lu Feng and Jiang Yang both exclaimed.

They ran back to her room and her patient's bed was empty.

"Where were you?" Jiang Yang asked the nurse.

"I went to get water and when I came back, she was not here. She is not even in the washroom," the nurse replied.

Just then two nurses came there. "She is not anywhere, we searched the entire floor," one nurse said and it scared Lu Feng and Jiang Yang. San Zemin's guards were sent back except for the two who were guarding the entry of the floor.

"She is injured and weak, so it's impossible for her to go far. She must be here somewhere," Jiang Yang spoke.

Both friends thought where she could be and why would she disappear suddenly?

"Check the security cameras," Lu Feng suggested and both ran towards the security control room. They checked the video footage where it showed Jiang Yuyan came out of the room. She was forcing herself to walk with the support of walls, holding her head in between as she must have felt pain and entered the elevator. Once the door closed, the elevator showed the arrow pointing up which showed she was going to the floors upstairs.

Just this much was enough for Lu Feng to understand her and he immediately ran out of that room. Realizing it, Jiang Yang followed Lu Feng, but he was faster. Entering the elevator, Lu Feng pressed the button for the top floor.

Till Jiang Yang reached the door of the elevator was closed, so he went by stairs, not having the patience to wait for the elevator to come as both elevators were busy.

Lu Feng reached the top floor and, getting out of the lift, he ran towards the stairs which led its way to the rooftop. Jiang Yang was just one floor away from him when he saw Lu Feng running towards the rooftop. The thing that scared Lu Feng, Jiang Yang had the same thing in his mind. Gathering all the energy, Jiang Yang started to climb the stairs as fast as he could.

Pushing the door of the rooftop, Lu Feng witnessed something that stopped his heart from beating.

Jiang Yuyan was standing on the parapet wall of the rooftop. Her eyes closed, she was ready to jump.

—

When the nurse in the Jiang Yuyan's room went out to get water for herself, Jiang Yuyan was awake. For the past few days, she had been observing the schedule of the attendant nurse, when she went out of the room and how much time it took her to come back.

Out of all, the most time she spent out was whenever she went to get water. The nurse must have spent her time talking to others, or the place of the water filter must be far away.

Every time the late night when the nurse went out and it was the silence around, Jiang Yuyan tried to get up to check her own strength, but every time it was not enough. Jiang Yuyan was waiting for the time being when she will get enough strength to walk properly.

That night, when the nurse went out to get the water, Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the bed. This time she was confident that she could make it as the previous two nights she could make it to the door easily.

Her head spinning and hurting a bit because of suddenly getting up from the bed. Taking a deep breath, she stepped towards the door and checked if someone was standing in the corridor and as expected no one was there.

Previous two nights she checked if the guards appointed were there and she noticed they were not so without wasting a moment, she stepped out and stepped towards the elevator,

walking as fast as she could, in between taking the support of the walls while being careful if someone was there.

They blocked the entire floor with few hospital staff members and two guards from San Zemin. Even the family members were not there as they had been instructed to go home, only allowing them to visit the patients in the daytime.

Jiang Yuyan finally made it into the elevator and stepped out at the top floor, which had stairs that opened at the rooftop. It took her time to climb those stairs while holding the railing and dragging herself somehow to make it the rooftop.

She finally made it, breathing heavily while holding her chest and standing with the support of the wall beside the door at the end of the staircase which opened into the rooftop of the hospital building.

Staring at the two-and-a-half feet tall parapet wall of the rooftop, she slowly stepped towards it. With each step closer to the parapet wall, the memories with Lu Qiang flashed in front of her eyes one by one. Tears rolling down from her eyes, a painful smile on her lips which showed she was happy to remember those precious moments but at the same time, it hurt her.

Jiang Yuyan stood up on the parapet wall and looked at the sky in front of her. Closing her eyes and taking a deep breath of that pleasant and cool breeze, she was ready to jump, the words left her mouth- "Wait for me Lu Qiang."

---

Getting out of the shock, Lu Feng ran towards her and pulled her back with force by holding her one hand and caught her in his arms. He hugged her tightly and started to cry.

The shock of losing her made him speechless and cry like a kid while Jiang Yuyan was standing motionless with her teary eyes closed. She was standing with his support as her legs gave up completely and he was holding her tightly to not let her fall down.

Jiang Yang reached the rooftop, catching his breath. Seeing Jiang Yuyan safe, he gave out a sigh of relief and kneeled

down helplessly, a continuous flow of tears making its way out.



# 605 Each Other's Saviors And Shelters...

Lu Feng continued holding Jiang Yuyan while crying till he made sure it was not a dream; she was with him and he could actually save her. Jiang Yuyan fell unconscious, and it scared Lu Feng.

Jiang Yang went to them and checked her pulse. Once Jiang Yang made sure she was fine, Lu Feng gave out a sigh of relief. Till then the hospital staff arrived and took her back to her room on the stretcher and Jiang Yang followed them.

Lu Feng stayed back and Jiang Yang didn't ask him to come with him, as he knew Lu Feng needed time alone.

Once they left, Lu Feng sat near the parapet wall with his back resting to it and cried out loud. He lost Lu Qiang and if he had lost her too, then he wouldn't be able to forgive himself.

Only if, he could have saved Lu Qiang, all this disaster wouldn't be happening in his happy family for which he sacrificed so many things. He wanted his family to be happy always, but after Lu Qiang's death; it looked impossible to do so.

Lu Feng didn't move from there for an hour and continued sitting there. When he went back, Jiang Yang was instructing something to the nurses and asked the guards to be nearby always.

Lu Feng looked inside the room to check on Jiang Yuyan, who was sleeping soundly and went to her. Jiang Yang preferred to let him go alone and stayed outside of the room. Lu Feng sat in the chair beside Jiang Yuyan's bed, his eyes staring at her were turned red and swollen because of the continuous crying.

Holding her hand in his hands and resting his forehead on it, he sat quietly.

"I am sorry, Yuyan." The silent words came out from him.

He didn't know, but hearing him, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes. She was looking at Lu Feng who was crying holding her hand but she said nothing and stayed silent.

"Lu Lijun is already in bad condition as if he doesn't want to live and now you too are trying to give up on your life. How am I going to survive with the blame of so many lives on me?" Lu Feng spoke again, not knowing Jiang Yuyan could hear him.

"W-What happened to Lu Lijun?" she asked and Lu Feng looked at her surprisingly. He didn't wish her to hear it, as it will make her worried for Lu Lijun when she herself was struggling.

Thinking about Lu Lijun, she suddenly realized she almost forgot about how Lu Lijun must be and how he must be coping with the sudden disaster in his life.

"I want to see him," Jiang Yuyan said.

Letting go of her hand, Lu Feng assured her, "He is fine," but Jiang Yuyan didn't believe him.

"He must be in a bad condition. I know. Take me to him, now," Jiang Yuyan order, feeling worried about the little guy.

She couldn't imagine how that little iceberg must have shattered into pieces with the news and all she wanted was to go to him.

Hearing her, Jiang Yang came inside and said, "It's late night. We will take you home tomorrow."

Lu Feng looked at Jiang Yang questioningly and Jiang Yang assured him through his eyes that it's fine.

"Yuyan, sleep now if you want to go to Lu Lijun, tomorrow," Jiang Yang commanded and she obeyed by closing her eyes.

Jiang Yang instructed the two nurses not to leave the room at any cost. One of them should be there, always.

Once they came out, Lu Feng asked, "Why did you say, you will take her home and....."

Jiang Yang interrupted Lu Feng and explained, "She is fine to go back home now. Also, I agreed to it because since she woke up, it was the first time in these ten days, she talked about something else other than Lu Qiang and didn't cry. Lu Lijun is the way to divert her attention to something else and give her something to do in her life."

"Will it work?" Lu Feng asked again.

"Lu Lijun is what Lu Qiang left for her and she will take his responsibility. As much as she needs him, I guess Lu Lijun will need her too as both are going through similar pain. They can be each other's saviors and shelters."

Lu Feng agreed to what Jiang Yang suggested as it made sense. Moreover, there was no other way he could think about to help them both.

The next day, they brought Jiang Yuyan home. Whenever other family members visited her in the hospital during these days, she was either sleeping or crying. Even if she was normal, she never talked to anyone as she could only think of Lu Qiang and there was only one thing in her mind and that was to follow Lu Qiang.

Everyone decided to not talk about anything that might make her cry and silently welcomed her. They were aware of what she tried to do the previous night and it already scared them to not do anything to make her do it again. Jiang Yuyan's parents came there too.

Ning Jiahui went to give her hand to go to her room which was shifted to the first floor in Lu Lian's room as they didn't want her to go to her room which might remind her about Lu Qiang while Lu Lian shifted into Lu Bao's room.

"Where is Lu Lijun?" Everyone heard her asking when they expected her to cry over what happened but she didn't. This surprised everyone.

"He is in his room," Ning Jiahui replied and nodding a little, Jiang Yuyan left to go to Lu Lijun's room leaving everyone surprised.

"Is she alright?" elder Lu asked, feeling worried about Jiang Yuyan. For him, it would have been okay if she had cried, but her such behavior worried him.

"She is not fine grandpa but to not make her repeat what she did last night, we have to divert her attention and there is only one solution, Lu Lijun, so let her do what she feels right," Jiang Yang replied.

—

Mass release Notifs- (Read everything carefully)

There are two ways I am suggesting and I want all of you to select one and comment about which one you would like.

1) Two-Three chapters daily with NO mass release. (Saturday off day)

or

2) Only one chapter a day for two weeks and the mass release on a Sunday after two weeks. (with Saturday off day)

These are the two conditions so choose one but both applies only if the RANKING IS STABLE.

Note- The author is one working person who gets hardly 5 hours of sleep. It's hard to stock 20 chapters while giving 3 chapters a day as it takes 2-3 hours to write a single chapter.

# 606 Yuyan Worried For Lu Lijun....

When Jiang Yuyan stepped to go upstairs, Lu Feng followed her.

"Let me help you."

Saying, Lu Feng offered her his hand.

Jiang Yuyan quietly held on to his one hand and his other hand surrounded her from behind to hold her at the arm on the other side. Jiang Yuyan needed support to go upstairs as she was still weak to climb all those stairs.

Assuring others about his sister, Jiang Yang followed Lu Feng. Halfway to the stairs, Jiang Yuyan found it difficult to climb and felt like she was tired and could not breathe. Without thinking twice, Lu Feng lifted her in his arms and took her to Lu Lijun's room.

Jiang Yuyan didn't resist as Lu Feng was not a stranger to her. He was one of those who cared for her always. Also, there was no other way and all she wanted was to go to Lu Lijun as soon as possible.

In the hospital, the whole night, she was thinking about Lu Lijun. She cursed herself for forgetting about him and thinking about just her own pain. It was hard to imagine his situation and it hurt her.

Once Lu Feng took her inside Lu Lijun's room, he made her sit on the couch and Jiang Yang, who followed them, offered her water. An Tain was already there who was checking on Lu Lijun, who was sleeping soundly.

Having water with her eyes fixed on the little guy in front of her, she felt worried. Handling back the water glass to her brother, she stepped towards Lu Lijun and sat at the edge of the bed just to look at him.

Lu Lijun looked pale and weak, his lips dry and lifeless, dark circles visible around his eyes, his skin lost its brightness and that was just in a few days. She could imagine how badly he was affected by it.

"How is he?" She asked, her eyes not leaving the sight of Lu Lijun's face and her hand caressing his hair and his cheek, gently.

"Not so good," An Tian replied and Jiang Yuyan countered, "What's the solution?" Her voice cold, devoid of any emotions and it worried Jiang Yang that his sister might go on her old path from where he pulled her out.

"We need to get his emotions out, which he locked. He should cry or get angry or however he would like to react," An Tian replied.

"Didn't he cry?" Jiang Yuyan asked as crying was the normal thing anyone could do when they are hurt.

"He didn't," An Tian replied.

It surprised Jiang Yuyan as she thought he must have cried his heart out and must have turned this home into hell with his anger, but it was unexpected behavior from him. She had so many questions in her mind as to how did he react once he got to know the news and what did he do.

Lu Feng understood her reaction as she didn't know what exactly happened with Lu Lijun so he narrated her the day when Lu Lijun left the home and everything after that.

An Tian added to it, "We tried to make him cry by reminding him about Lu Qiang by mentioning the moments he had with Lu Qiang and even showed him his pics with the story behind it but every effort failed. He didn't react to anything."

Jiang Yuyan understood and said, "I will stay with him."

"Hmm!" Lu Feng nodded and they left the room.

While going out, An Tian instructed, "He will wake up in the next one hour."

In the living room, when all were sitting silent, Su Hui spoke, "Mother, we all have to go to our ancestral town as it will be

the 15 days soon."

There was a ritual that they have to bury the ashes of the dead person at the place of a family cemetery in the fifteen days of the person's death. All were so engrossed in the grief that no one thought about it but Su Hui.

Su Hui was handling everything in the family and she was looking after everyone with care as a responsible person in the family. After gathering so much courage, she managed to say it knowing what would result from it.

As expected, everyone's eyes turned teary, making the atmosphere emotional again.

Wiping her tears, Grandma Zhao Shuang said, "Su Hui is right. We have to leave for the town. One of us can stay back to look after Lu Jinhai and others can go there."

Even though it was sad, they had to do it. Lu Feng, Jiang Yang and An Tian who came downstairs, heard it and had no word to say.

Just then the police arrived at the mansion. They wanted to take Jiang Yuyan's statement. After the accident, they could only take the statement from the driver and they needed it from Jiang Yuyan too.

As Yuyan was upstairs, they sent a lady police officer to get her statement, but Jiang Yuyan refused to talk to anyone and the lady police officer had to come back.

Knowing her condition, elder Lu asked the inspector to give her some more time as she returned home just a while ago and the police inspector agreed.

Upon asking what was the progress of the case, the police inspector looked helpless and reported.

"We tried everything possible. It's clear that it was a setup to kill the person, but we still couldn't get any strong proof and lead about who planned it. The driver was drunk, so he said it was his mistake and accepted the blame. He is ready to get punished."

"Inspector, Lu Qiang was not an ordinary person. There must be powerful people behind everything, so investigate in accordance with it," Lu Chen instructed.

That calm and silent Lu Chen looked cold, and his words didn't sound soft at all.

"We know Mr. Lu and trust us we are trying our best. Our best detectives are working on it," the inspector assured them.

It was sad news for the family that it was taking too much time to catch the culprit and from the inspector's words, they understood it would not be easy. Jiang Yuyan was standing on the first floor near the staircase and from there she heard it all that the inspector said.



## 607 Helping Each Other...

Hearing the inspector, the grip of Jiang Yuyan's hand tightened on the staircase railing, her eyes filled with the anger and the scary darkness in them, as it was clear that someone killed her husband and it was not any normal accident.

She had so many things to look after- The first one was to look after Lu Lijun, the second one was to make herself physically strong and the third one was something scary going on in her mind.

The police left and Jiang Yuyan went back to Lu Lijun's room. She sat on the couch; her legs stretched on the center table in front of it, her hand resting on the hand rest while her sight fixed to the ceiling, her eyes carried something in it that made her look scary. She seems like a silence before the storm.

Jiang Yang asked Lu Feng to have a talk alone and asked An Tian to follow him too.

"Lu Feng, we need to monitor Yuyan," Jiang Yang said.

Lu Feng agreed. "I know. We can't let her repeat what she tried to last night."

Shaking his head anxiously, Jiang Yang said, "No, Lu Feng. She won't try it again. It's a different thing now."

"I don't know what's with her but I can see the different changes in her personality," An Tian concluded siding with Jiang Yang.

It clicked Lu Feng, "Do you mean she....."

"You are right," Jiang Yang interrupted him and continued, "An Tian, we might need your help."

"I need to know what's the problem with her. I noticed it even before but never tried to know it as there was no need," said An Tian.

Jiang Yang narrates everything to An Tian.

"For now, we can keep her busy with Lu Lijun and later think about finding a way," An Tian concluded and the other two agreed.

Jiang Yang went back to the hospital with his father as Lu Jinhai was still there and An Tian and Lu Feng went to Lu Lijun's room to check on him as it was the time he might wake up.

They noticed Jiang Yuyan was staring at the ceiling without blinking an eye and there was complete silence.

"Yuyan, you should go to your room as you need a rest. We have arranged your things in Lu Lian's room," Lu Feng instructed her.

"Hmm! But I'll stay with Lu Lijun, you can go back to your room."

A cold voice showing strong denial came out and Lu Feng couldn't say anything, not willing to do anything against Jiang Yuyan's will. An Tian was staring at her to know what her mental state must be.

Lu Feng and An Tian were about to leave the room, just then there was a movement in bed. Lu Lijun opened his eyes as he heard Jiang Yuyan's voice and looked at her.

It surprised An Tian and Lu Feng as it was the first time Lu Lijun showed signs that he recognized someone and straightaway looked at that person when other times he kept looking down avoiding to look at anyone.

Stepping towards him, Lu Feng spoke, "Lu Lijun, you awake?"

Lu Lijun continued looking at Jiang Yuyan and didn't respond to Lu Feng as if he didn't hear him.

Hearing Lu Feng, Jiang Yuyan looked at the bed and saw Lu Lijun was staring at her. Her eyes, which looked dark while staring at the ceiling, suddenly had a gentle look.

Putting her legs down from the center table and getting up from the couch, she went to Lu Lijun. Sitting on his one side,

she caressed his head and asked, "How are you feeling, Lu Lijun?"

Lu Lijun continued looking at her but didn't reply. Jiang Yuyan had gone through something like this before and she could understand what he was going through, so she didn't force him to say anything.

Holding his hand in hers, she spoke again, "I am hungry, but I was waiting for you to wake up so that we can eat together." Jiang Yuyan tried to pull out a smile on her lips but it was not coming out,

Jiang Yuyan knew Lu Lijun ate nothing, so the first thing she thought about making him eat something. Lu Feng asked Butler to bring food for them and helped Lu Lijun sit on the bed.

All this while, Lu Lijun was just staring at Jiang Yuyan, not moving his sight from her. She was trying to keep her expressions as normal as she could keep, feeling nervous under his gaze that she might break into the tears.

In a while, the butler brought food and Jiang Yuyan offered to feed Lu Lijun.

"Let's eat," she said, avoiding to look at his gaze which was fixed on her. She blew on the soup and offered him a spoonful and he drank obediently, but still, his sight was fixed on hers.

An Tian and Lu Feng both noticed how the behavior of both of them changed when they faced each other. Silent and emotionless Lu Lijun and cold Jiang Yuyan showed there were still emotions left inside them and they showed only for each other.

Once Jiang Yuyan fed him a few spoons of soup, Lu Lijun stopped her by holding her hand, which puzzled her and not saying a word, Lu Lijun took the spoon from her hand.

What happened next surprised the other three. Lu Lijun offered soup to Jiang Yuyan. He wanted her to eat too. No one knew what was going on in his mind but what he did was the good news as it could cause an improvement in his condition.

Jiang Yuyan didn't say no to him. Though she was not feeling like eating, she had no heart to say no to him.

An Tian put his hand on Lu Feng's shoulder as assuring him that things are going in the right way. Though there was not much change in Lu Lijun, but this small thing meant a lot and it showed he cared for Jiang Yuyan.

## 608 Not Inhumane...

In Xi Cheng's office...

"What are the updates?" Xi Cheng asked.

"Seems like Mrs. Xi is in trouble after President Lu's death as most of the people who were ready to back her up, to oppose you, they are scared of you now," the assistant replied.

Xi Cheng left out the soft chuckle, "As expected. Let her try for some more time. It would be exciting to see her disappointed and defeated."

---

In Xi residence...

"Mother, why did you look so worried? I can see you are working too much since the past few days," Nixxxie asked as she went to her mother's room.

"I am fine, don't worry about me," Song Meilin replied as she didn't want to show her worries to Nixxxie.

Though the whole business was under Nixxxie's name, she was inexperienced and still so young to handle business. To make her lead the company though Song Meilin would be the one handling it from back, she needed the support of important board members to get Xi Cheng out from his position but Lu Qiang's sudden death changed the situation.

Song Meiling was sad about his death as he admired him and she knew he was one great person, but there was nothing she could do. What left in her hand was to protect her daughter and she wanted to try her best.

Just then there was a knock on the door.

"Come in!" Song Meilin permitted the person and the one who opened the door surprised them. That was Nixxxie's father, Xi Guiren.

"What are you doing here?" Song Meilin asked, Nixxxie as surprised as her mother.

"I am here to suggest something," Xi Guiren replied.

"If there is nothing important, you can go back," Song Meilin said as she was already tensed with her own problems.

"I know you don't want to see me here but I have something to say," Xi Guiren insisted and Song Meilin permitted.

"For now, stop what you have planned. There would be someone who will help you in place of him, so just wait." Xi Guiren was referring to Lu Qiang. "Doing anything in haste might ruin your plan and there won't be any come back as your failure will only make your opponent strong. Your supporters might lose their faith in you, so it's better to step back for now."

Xi Guiren suggested. Though Song Meilin was not willing to take any advice from Xi Guiren, but what he said made sense and she agreed, "Hmm!"

"Just wait for the right moment." Saying, Xi Guiren left.

Nixxxie couldn't understand whom his father was referring to as 'he' in his conversation who was helping his mother and asked, "Who was the one to help you, mother?"

Giving out a deep sigh and closing her eyes, Song Meilin replied, "President Lu Qiang."

"What? He was helping you against my stepbrother?" Nixxxie exclaimed and Song Meilin nodded.

"Mother, don't tell me that we are the reason for his death and my step-brother did the same thing with him as he did with brother Xi Guo."

This scared Nixxxie and she didn't know how to take it. All she wanted to know was that they were not the reason for Lu Qiang's death.

"I was afraid of it too, but Xi Cheng is not capable of harming Lu Qiang so easily or he would have done it long back. There must be someone more powerful behind it and that person must have a really strong reason for it as Lu Qiang was not an

ordinary person whom anyone would dare to hurt just like that."

Song Meilin concluded, but Nixxxie was still thinking what if they were the reason for his death? How would she face Jiang Yuyan, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng? Will she ever dare to go in front of them? Though nothing was sure, these thoughts were making her restless, not to mention how worse she would feel for losing a nice man like Lu Qiang just because of her family matters and business politics.

"Mother, can't we just let it go and live in peace? If you are doing it all for me, then there is no need. Let him get everything as I don't want money," Nixxxie pleaded.

"It's not just you, Nicky. There are so many lives depending on it. Your grandfather raised this business from the scratch and that man is degrading his efforts by his bad way of work as he only needs money. I can't leave my father's hard work in one devil's hands."

Nixxxie again wanted to say let it be, but she couldn't as it would just upset her mother. Her heart filled with fear of so many things, Nixxxie left her mother's room. She looked at her cellphone and wanted to call Jiang Yang, but suddenly she stopped with the reason unknown to her.

--

Zhang Wei's residence...

In the evening, Zhang Wei and Ming Rusheng were having dinner.

"What are your planes now, Ming Rusheng?" Zhang Wei asked.

"Same as before. I will be the king and then get the queen I want." Ming Rusheng replied casually, but Zhang Wei didn't like the way he said it.

"This is the time you should just focus on business. Forget about her," Zhang Wei instructed.

"She is the reason of what I am doing then how can I forget about her?" Ming Rusheng countered.

"It's not time for you to trouble her when she is in the worst phase of her life."

"I will not trouble her or anything. I am going to just wait for her when there would be a day she will forget her pain and decide to move forward."

"What will you do then?" Zhang Wei asked.

"I will propose to marry her and I am sure her parents won't say no as I would be the best one till then," Ming Rusheng replied.

"But...."

Sensing the worry of his uncle, Ming Rusheng assured him, "Don't worry, uncle. I don't have intentions to hurt her. I will marry her and always look after her. She will get everything that she deserves."

"From what I know, she won't forget him this easily."

"I don't mind waiting for her forever. Having her by my side and seeing her smiling would be enough."

Seeing, Ming Rusheng didn't have any ill intentions towards Jiang Yuyan, Zhang Wei left out a sigh of relief and thought his nephew was not inhumane like him.

---

Two more chapters would be here in the next 4 and a half hr but rank should be there as today is the reset day for the votes and votes will start from the zero.

The next two chapters included Yuyan's first step towards her revenge..



## 609 Hurting Blames...

In the far-away city...

The man knocked on the door of one of the rooms and opened it. The moment he did it, a cushion came flying in his way which he caught up even before it could touch his face.

When he moved the cushion aside to see inside the room and took another step inside, another cushion came flying towards him which he stopped by another hand.

The man gazed coldly at the woman who was burning with anger and then moved his sight inside the huge room where everything inside was scattered everywhere.

"What's this, Zi Ruo?" the man asked coldly.

"As you called me a wild animal, a few days back, so I am trying to be the one," she replied and picking up one more cushion from the couch she threw it at him again, which he dodged.

As he went closer to her, Zhi Ruo spoke, "You took my cell phone away and kept me in this room alone. I can't even watch the TV or anything but to keep staring outside from the window," She said, getting up from the couch to stand facing him.

Gazing coldly, he took a step closer to her and she retreated as his gaze scared her and she sat back on the couch.

He leaned down and put his both hands on the backrest of the couch on either side of her, his face closer to hers, making her shrink in the couch.

"Do you know what did you do for me to keep you here like this?" The man asked and she shook her head lightly, not daring to look into his eyes.

The Man answered, "Just because of you, I couldn't save one precious life and lost one more person whom I admired."

One could see how he was burning inside with anger and wanted to strangle her at the very moment, but he couldn't.

"W-What do you mean?" Zhi Ruo asked.

"If you hadn't kept me busy with your idiotic attempts of annoying me, I would have been able to save him," The man answer and picked up the remote control of the TV to turn it on.

"I-It's not working," she said but the next moment the TV was on and he said, "It is."

What she saw the next moment shocked her to her bones. It was the news of Lu Qiang's death. She stood up from the couch in shock.

"It's...how can it be? Tell me it's not the truth."

"It's the truth," he said, who was standing just beside her.

Seeing the whole news, the tears rolled down from her eyes.

"When did this happen?"

"Ten days before," he replied calmly and she turned to look at him, her teary eyes showed how much she was hurt but disappointed with the man in front of her.

"Why didn't you tell me?" she asked, but he didn't turn to look at her and answered while still looking at the TV ahead.

"I had my reasons."

"Your reasons, huh? Do you even know what he was for me?"

"I know!"

"Then why didn't you tell me?" Saying, she broke into a loud cry.

The man who looked ice-cold got affected by seeing her crying. Not realizing he turned to look at her to console her, but before he could say anything, Zi Ruo hugged him and cried while burying her face into his chest, her hands clutching his white shirt on either side.

He got surprised, but he didn't have the heart to push her away. Her crying and sobbing became louder and involuntarily

his hands moved to hold her.

"W-Why is this happening? All the people I loved and treasured are leaving me. How am I going to live like this, alone?"

With her words, his expressions changed and his hands, which were moving to hug back and pat her to console her, stopped midway.

His soft expressions turned into cold ones and he said, "If You hadn't kept me busy, I would have been able to save at least one person but just like before, this time too, you made me lose one person."

His words were hurting. She was not yet out of the previous blames he had been putting on her and yet another one came to her. She stepped back to move away from him but had no words to say.

He left the room, not looking at her even once and she continued crying while kneeling on the floor. A voice of her cry, echoing everywhere and his heart was feeling as if someone was piercing thousands of needles in it.

—

Lu Mansion... In Su Hui's bedroom.

There was a knock on the door and Lu Feng entered the room. Seeing him there, surprised her and she asked, "What happened?"

"What was the need of suggesting going to the town to bury Lu Qiang's ashes?" Lu Feng questioned.

"It's a ritual so that the soul of the dead person can rest in peace and we have to do it according to the customs," she replied.

"We can wait for it. Don't you know everyone is already in bad condition."

"I know but we can't stop what's there to be done."

Lu Feng left out a light chuckle, "I understand, as you must be so eager to prove he is dead as you can have your way now,

mother."

His words angered Su Hui and she exclaimed in a loud voice, "Lu Feng! How dare you say such a thing?"

"Am I wrong, mother? As there is no one in the way of your dreams."

"Shut up, Lu Feng. Do you take your mother for this low?"  
Tears rolled down from her eyes and spoke.

"I am equally sad about his death. He was like a son to me. How can I forget, he grew up in front of my eyes. There was a time when I looked after him in the absence of his mother along with you and your brother. I fed him with my hands, put him to sleep like his own mother, I played and laughed with him. When he cried, I put all my efforts to make him calm. That day when he was born and I took him in my hands, is still alive in front of my eyes. How can I not be sad about his death?"

Her words left Lu Feng speechless. He turned to leave the room and spoke, "It's a relief that you still remember those days." Saying he left, leaving his mother crying.

---

Dear readers, I am creating an Instagram page for the novel where all the readers can come together. For that purpose, I need one help. I want you all to tell me which lines from the novel you finds the best so far, so that I can use it there.. write the lines in the comment.. XOXO

# 610 Need To Make Him Cry...

After Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan finished the food, Jiang Yuyan wiped Lu Lijun's mouth with the napkin and took away the tray to put it on the center table. She went to the table where the water was kept and filled one glass to bring it to Lu Lijun. Once he had water, she went back to the table, drank water and returned to Lu Lijun.

The surprising thing was, all this while, Lu Lijun's sight never left her even for a single moment. His sight followed her everywhere she went as if she will disappear if he moved his sight away.

An Tian and Lu Feng were observing him from the gallery of the room where both were standing, not intending to disturb the harmonious atmosphere between the two.

An Tian had relaxed expressions on his face and said, "She is the medicine for him."

"Hmm! I can see, the moment he saw her, he changed, but why is he looking at her all the time? Does he want to say something to her but able to say it?" Lu Feng asked.

Giving out a deep sigh, An Tian spoke, "From what I see, after Lu Qiang, she is the person precious to him. I don't know how their relationship is, but he values her a lot. He is afraid that she might disappear from his sight just like his brother, that's why his sight is following her everywhere."

"Like this, it would be hard for her to leave him alone. I mean, she can't be with him all the time. Also, she is yet to heal completely, to exhaust herself by taking care of him the whole day." Lu Feng showed concern about her.

"I understand, but for the time being, let the things go as they are right now. We can think about other things later. She knows what she is doing so let her do it."

An Tian suggested while Lu Feng agreed and looked at Jiang Yuyan who was talking to Lu Lijun who was not saying a single word in response.

"She is suppressing her own pain just to take care of him," Lu Feng commented.

An Tian nodded, "Hmm! I think you won't need me here now."

"How about we watch TV Lu Lijun," Jiang Yuyan asked. Her voice was calm and pleasant. Lu Lijun didn't react, so she said again, "I want to watch cartoons, will it be fine with you?" she was trying her best to make him talk.

Not replying again, Lu Lijun moved his sight towards the TV in front of him. Jiang Yuyan turned on the TV and sat on the couch. She was watching TV but Lu Lijun was looking at her.

Jiang Yuyan noticed it and waited for some more time, but it was still the same. She turned off the TV and went to Lu Lijun.

Sitting at the edge of the bed, she asked calmly, "What happened, Lu Lijun? Do you want to say something to me? If so, just say it as you already know I have a birdie brain and not smart enough to understand the things by just looking at you."

She waited for him to say something, but he didn't reply and moved into the bed, so he could lie down.

"Ah! So you wanted to sleep." Saying, she pulled the quilt to cover him.

The moment she moved to go away from him, Lu Lijun held her hand. She stopped to see if he wanted something and sat back in the bed.

"Do you want something?" she asked but not replying, Lu Lijun held her palm in his and closed his eyes. It was a tight grip as if he didn't want her to leave.

Understanding him, Jiang Yuyan sat there and once he fell asleep, she got up. An Tian and Lu Feng came to her.

"Yuyan, you should rest too as you are still not recovered," said Lu Feng and Jiang Yuyan just nodded.

Looking at An Tian, she asked, "What can we do more to improve his condition?"

"We need to make him cry," An Tian replied.

"Hmm!" She just hummed and went back to sit on the couch, just to say something again while looking at Lu Feng, "I need a cellphone."

Lu Feng Nodded and left with An Tian. Jiang Yuyan's cell phone was damaged after the accident, so she needed the new one.

Once they left, Jiang Yuyan asked the servant to bring Lu Qiang's laptop to her. Lu Lijun was sleeping and Jiang Yuyan started to work on the laptop. She had something in her mind which she wanted to do as soon as possible.

There was one folder in Lu Qiang's laptop, which he showed her once. He told her that there was information about his trustable people. Those were the biggest support in his journey, and if she ever needed them, she can go through it to contact them.

That folder was locked securely and only Lu Qiang could open it, but later he changed the setting to give its access to Jiang Yuyan too. At that time she took it lightly and never, ever thought that she would actually need it one day.

Unlocking the folder, Jiang Yuyan went through the information about everyone. The first person she saw was the one she wanted to meet as soon as possible, and that was San Zemin.

She remembered one more thing that Lu Qiang told her. Just knowing these people was not enough. If she wanted them to work for her, she needed something important that showed Lu Qiang's approval to it.

There was one more locked file that needed a password to open it and not that easy to do so. Even for the smartest hacker, it was next to impossible. There was just one attempt given to try the open the file and if it failed, then that file will get destroy on its own.

At that time she didn't listen to him and ignored what he said, but now she needed this file and only then she could get those people to work for her. Unlocking that file meant Lu Qiang told the person password himself as there was no chance for trying luck and if he told it by himself, that meant Lu Qiang wanted those people to help that person and take the person as their boss.

There was one more meaning to it. If the person other than Lu Qiang could access that file, that meant Lu Qiang was in trouble.

—

Today is the day of the reset and voting will start from zero so vote.. if votes are more than the last week, you all will get a BONUS CHAPTER... Fighting to maintain the same rank as last week #4



## 611 The Password...

Jiang Yuyan thought what could be the password. At that time, she ignored him and now she was regretting it. She was desperate to open that file, but she could not remember what he said the password was. For what she had decided to do, she needed those people and the control and the authority over them.

Jiang Yuyan was trying to remember their conversation and while doing so she went to the gallery. It was already evening and in that cold pleasant breeze she tried to remember it just then her sight followed the gate of the mansion where Lu Feng said bye to An Tian and one man in the black suit stepped down who went to Lu Feng.

She recognized him and that was San Zemin. 'What is he doing here and why is he with Lu Feng? How can Lu Feng contact him when San Zemin only worked for Lu Qiang? Is Lu Feng too, have the access of these files and is he their new boss now?'

So many questions crossed her mind, but she denied it as Lu Qiang told her that there was only one file which one had to unlock to reach his secret side. For now, she thought to ignore it and focussed on what she was doing, but nothing could come to her mind.

Time passed by and Lu Lijun woke up. There was not much difference in his activities other than obeying what Jiang Yuyan said and keep looking at her all the time. When she put him to sleep after the dinner, Lu Lijun again held her hand as to not let her go, so she had no option but to sit beside him.

She was tired, so she fell asleep while sitting on the bed and resting at the headboard. At Midnight Lu Feng came to the room to check on them and seeing her sleeping in an uncomfortable position, he went to ask her to sleep properly but she was in a deep sleep, must be the effect of medicines she took.

Lu Feng pulled Jiang Yuyan's hand out from Lu Lijun's hold and lifted her up in his arms but he had to stop as Lu Lijun stopped him by holding the corner of Lu Feng's shirt which was left loose and not tucked in the pants.

Lu Lijun was awake the moment he felt that his hand was empty.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun who was looking at him with a questioning gaze and displeased expressions on his face while Jiang Yuyan was still in a deep sleep even though Lu Feng lifted her in his arms.

"She needs to sleep comfortably, Lu Lijun as she is still hurt and it will affect her health. I am taking her to the couch." Lu Feng said, signalling towards the couch in the room.

Lu Lijun let go of Lu Feng's shirt and allowed him to carry Jiang Yuyan towards the couch. Making her comfortably sleep by putting one pillow under her head and covering her with the quilt, Lu Feng said good night to Lu Lijun and left.

Not replying to Lu Feng, Lu Lijun continued staring at Jiang Yuyan. His eyes were getting heavy, but he didn't want to close them in the fear of if he closed his eyes, Jiang Yuyan might disappear from there.

Though he tried to control his sleep, in a while he fell asleep.

Jiang Yuyan was in a dreamland where she was with Lu Qiang. Though she was sleeping, there was a smile on her lips seeing him in her dream. It was the day when he was telling her about the secret folder in the laptop, but she was not paying attention.

She and Lu Qiang were sitting on the couch in their bedroom.

"Yuyan, keep that mobile aside and pay attention to what I am showing you," Lu Qiang instructed while turning his laptop's screen towards her she unwillingly looked at it.

"See, in this folder there is information about all the people and I have changed the setting for you to access it too. Just do this and it will open."

"Wait, wait, don't show me what's inside. I will check it later. I am too tired to go through all this secret information," she pleaded and Lu Qiang agreed, "Okay, but just remember about it," and she nodded.

"There is one file that is the most important one if you want to access all my authorities and want to control these people. Here it is," he showed her and she replied casually, "Got It!"

Lu Qiang continued.

"There is only one chance you will get to open this file, if not then it will get corrupted on its own that no one could recover it. So, make sure to enter the right password. The moment you will open this file, you have to call this person called San Zemin. He will get to know you have opened it as it will send him an automated email."

"Oh! Impressive," Jiang Yuyan commented.

"And the password is....."

"Even if you tell me the password, I will forget it as I don't remember the things I don't find important," Jiang Yuyan interrupted him.

"If you forget the password, then think the password is something that you don't like to hear and will get angry to know that I used it as my password. You might curse me the very moment."

With these words from Lu Qiang, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and mumbled, "What's there that makes me angry?"

She thought about it and her sight fell on Lu Lijun who was sleeping soundly and something clicked her mind. Getting up in a hurry from the couch, Jiang Yuyan opened the laptop which she kept on the centre table.

Exhaling out of her mouth, she started to type the password to open the file, her heart racing faster as it was the first and last chance for her. She typed each and every letter carefully so that she won't do any mistake.

"LITTLE BIRDIE"

Typing it, she pressed the enter button and closed her eyes as she was anxious to her bones. The moment she opened the eyes, she saw the password was correct and the file opened.

To her surprise, there was nothing inside the file and it was empty.

---

We need to maintain the rank so keep voting.. XOXO

## 612 Meaning Of The Email...

That empty file shocked Jiang Yuyan. She was expecting to see something really important inside it like some kind of document, giving the person permission to take Lu Qiang's authority in hand. As it was empty, what could she have drawn from it?

Closing her eyes, Jiang Yuyan leaned back on the couch and thought, 'I really want to curse you for keeping this as a password, but I wish... I wish you to be in front of me to show you my anger. As you went far away, I can't even curse you but beg you to come back to me.'

Tears rolled down from the corners of her eyes, those didn't want to stop even though she tried to control them. Spending a few moments of silence, she collected herself and thought about what Lu Qiang said about the automated email which would be sent to San Zemin once she unlocked the file.

"I need a cellphone," she thought and her sight fell on one box on the center table which she failed to notice before as she was working on the laptop in the dim light of the night lamp, not willing to wake up Lu Lijun.

She recognized it's a cellphone box and picked it up. There was a sticky note attached to the box. 'New cell phone for you with the same contact number before.'

Jiang Yuyan understood, Lu Feng bought it for her after she asked him to get it for her at noon.

A while ago, When Lu Feng came to the room to check on Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun, he brought the cellphone box with him and knowing Jiang Yuyan must be sleeping, he already wrote a note on it.

Getting the cellphone out of the box, the first thing Jiang Yuyan did was to save the number on San Zemin in her mobile. Once she was done, she went to Lu Lijun to make sure he was sleeping and went to the gallery.

She dialed San Zemin's number. The moment she heard him saying hello, she spoke, "You must have got the email."

"Hmm! I was expecting to get the call from Mrs. Lu." She heard the voice from the other side of the line.

San Zemin was sitting in his workplace going through the information related to Lu Qiang's accident. His tablet beeped and it was the email from one Id that was known to him and Lu Qiang only.

It surprised him, as he never thought to get this email. The accident was a sudden incident when no one knew it would happen. It made him think who must be the person whom Lu Qiang trusted this much.

It was not Lu Feng because he met Lu Feng and there was no mention of it. He thought about it and one name clicked in his mind- Mrs. Lu. So many thoughts ran into his already busy brain.

'Can it be really her? Boss loves her the most and she was everything for him but this is something dangerous so how can it be? Can he really let her enter this dangerous side? If so, will she be able to handle it? Is she that capable? Handling this, that means she would handle the entire Lu Corporation and she would be the next boss. If the boss has given her all the rights, then there must be something really special in her.'

San Zemin didn't know what to think of it, but if his guess was right, then she would call him soon. As he thought it, his cell phone rang and it was none other than Mrs. Lu. He had every family member's contact numbers saved with him.

"As the mail has been sent, the meaning is clear," Jiang Yuyan asked, her voice cold, her eyes showed the determination of what she had planned to do.

It was the sudden change for San Zemin, so he didn't know what to say to her other than accepting her as his boss. He doubted if she knew what kind of power she held in her hand from the moment she unlocked that file.

"Yes, Mrs. Lu," San Zemin replied and asked, "What would you like me to help you with?"

"One car and a driver, morning at 9 o'clock," Jiang Yang instructed her voice cold, not elaborating anything as if it was an order for him.

San Zemin noticed her ordering side and replied. "Will do. Anything else, Mrs. Lu?" He asked.

"There's a lot, but for now just this one." Replying, she hung up the call.

Her reply "There's a lot" left San Zemin puzzled. The way she said it, he could guess she was up to something.

He thought, 'And the car, why does she need a car? Isn't it the time she should mourn over her husband's death and when her own condition is not that well. Why did she ask me for it when in the Lu Mansion she had so many cars and drivers and she could have gotten anyone of it?'

When Jiang Yuyan hung up the call and continued looking at the dark starry sky blankly, she heard the noise which made her snapped out of the daze and she looked back inside the room.

Lu Lijun was awake and he looked anxious. In the process of getting out of the bed in a hurry, he dropped the glass from the bedside table on the floor and it broke. Jiang Yuyan rushed inside and saw Lu Lijun was walking towards the door of the room in a hurry.

"Lu Lijun!" Jiang Yuyan called him.

Halting in his tracks, Lu Lijun turned to look at her. His expressions changed from anxious one to relax one as if he found what he was searching for.

"What happened?" she asked, stepping towards him and not answering her, Lu Lijun ran to her and hugged her.

His action startled her, but she realized he was scared of something and she hugged him back.

Letting him calm down while she was patting his back and caressing his head, she said, "It's okay. I am here. Everything would be fine."

—

Guys, you can visit the INSTAGRAM page of the novel where you will find some fun stuff like cute moments between our characters, arts made by fans and memes too. It's still new and lots of stuff is there to add. I hope you will enjoy it.

Search the account with username- Mynovel.20 (the account has same profile picture as our novel)



## 613 One More Promise...

Hearing Jiang Yuyan, Lu Lijun tightened his grip around her as if he didn't want to let her go and if he did, she would disappear.

Just then the door of the room opened and Lu Feng entered inside. He looked panicked.

Lu Feng could not sleep, so he thought to go to the garden, but when he reached the staircase, he heard the sound from Lu Lijun's room and ran towards it just to see Lu Lijun was holding Jiang Yuyan tightly.

Lu Feng understood there must be a problem as Lu Lijun never acted like this and stood there quietly.

Jiang Yuyan saw Lu Feng standing at the door. As their sights met, Lu Feng signaled to ask if everything was fine and she nodded a little to assure him.

Understanding the reason behind Lu Lijun's action, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "I am not going anywhere, Lu Lijun. I would always be with you."

Her words were what he wanted to hear. As Jiang Yuyan said it, Lu Lijun let her go and lifted his face up to look at her as if asking if she was telling the truth. His sight still showed the doubt.

Looking into his doubtful eyes with her gentle-looking ones, Jiang Yuyan offered him a light smile, her hands cupping his face in her hands and the next moment Lu Lijun heard a gentle and sweet assuring voice.

"I will always be with you, Lu Lijun. Trust me."

Still, it was not enough for him and he continued looking at her with his doubtful sight.

Maintaining the same pleasant smile, to comfort him and to show him that she was not lying, Jiang Yuyan held his hand.

Entangling her pinky finger with his, she said calmly, looking into his eyes.

"I will always be with you and I will never ever leave you alone. I will always be here to take care of you and to look after what you need and that's a promise, a pinky promise."

Finally, there was a change in his doubtful expressions and Jiang Yuyan gave out a sigh of relief.

Lu Feng went to them and patting Lu Lijun's head, he said, "Don't worry Lu Lijun, she would be here with you always, as we will never let her go."

Lu Lijun looked at Lu Feng and Lu Feng nodded lightly, saying he was telling the truth. It was the first time Lu Lijun looked at someone else other than Jiang Yuyan and he was showing the signs of improvement.

As finally, Lu Lijun was calm, Jiang Yuyan instructed, "Let's go to sleep now."

Saying, Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun to the bed by holding his hand and he followed her quietly. Lu Feng picked the quilt from the floor, which dropped when Lu Lijun got out of the bed in a haste.

When Lu Lijun lay down in the bed, he didn't let go of Jiang Yuyan's hand and instead made a space beside himself by shifting to one side of that king-size bed as if asking her to sleep there.

It surprised both Jiang Yuyan and Lu Feng.

When Jiang Yuyan fell asleep in Lu Lijun's room before, Lu Lijun went to sleep in Lu Feng's room even though he had a king-size bed that could accommodate two people comfortably and both could sleep without disturbing each other's sleep. Lu Lijun even had a comfortable couch in his room to sleep on, but he preferred to go to another room.

As Lu Lijun didn't like to get closer to anyone other than his two brothers, they thought it was his normal reaction but now as he was asking Jiang Yuyan to be with him, that means he was terrified to let her go away. Not to forget his panicked reaction a while ago.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng as if asking what to do, and Lu Feng signaled her to go ahead as there was no other option. Moreover, Lu Lijun was just one scared kid, so there was no problem with it.

Jiang Yuyan lay down beside him at the other side of the bed and Lu Feng covered Lu Lijun with a quilt in his hands and went to the couch to get another quilt for Jiang Yuyan which she used before and covered her too.

Saying good night, Lu Feng left and Jiang Yuyan asked Lu Lijun to close his eyes and she was not going anywhere. Lu Lijun fell asleep soon, still holding Jiang Yuyan's hand while Jiang Yuyan continued staring at the ceiling.

The next morning, Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan had breakfast in their room and other family members had it in the dining room. Though Jiang Yuyan was back home, no one could talk to her as she was busy taking care of Lu Lijun since she was back. Also, no one could gather the courage to go to her and she never came downstairs.

They all could understand what kind of pain she was going through and knowing she tried to kill herself, they preferred to leave her alone as instructed by Lu Feng. Lu Lijun was the way to keep her busy and divert her attention.

They were worried about Lu Lijun too but left him in the care of Jiang Yuyan as she was the one one who could handle him the way Lu Qiang did in the past. It relieved them at least they both could be each other's saviors.

Ning Jiahui spent her time mostly in the hospital as Lu Jinhai was there, so she already left Lu Lijun into Jiang Yuyan's care. She knew she was being selfish to do so as Jiang Yuyan herself was hurt. Ning Jiahui could think nothing about but her son's unfortunate death and her husband's wellbeing.

Qin Xiu, Daughter-in-law of Sui Hui and Lu Han's wife, was out of the country when all this happened. Her father, one of the famous businessmen, was dealing with life and death after going through critical surgery. She had to stay there with him. As he was better, she finally got to come back to China after

the ten days of the incident. Just like others, she was hurt too, knowing what happened with Lu Qiang.

—

So many readers are following the INSTAGRAM page of the novel. For the creation of that page, I would like to thank two readers here, two cute girls who asked me to create it and they are personally handling the Instagram page.

Sakshi\_Gopal and Priyavook

Every post there is a creation of those two and they are working hard to create exciting posts. You will always see these two cuties commenting here on the chapter. For their love towards the novel and for their hard work to create interesting stuff, I'll say thank you to them from all of us...  
XOXO

## 614 Taking Lu Lijun Out...

After having breakfast with the family, Qin Xiu went to see Jiang Yuyan where she was helping Lu Lijun with breakfast. Seeing Lu Lijun and knowing his condition, Qin Xiu didn't talk anything that could remind him about Lu Qiang even though she wanted to console Jiang Yuyan.

"How are you, Lu Lijun," Qin Xiu asked but Lu Lijun didn't reply so Jiang Yuyan replied instead of him, "He is fine. I am taking him out somewhere so we can talk later."

"Out?" Qin Xiu asked and Jiang Yuyan just hummed.

Qin Xiu asked nothing as she could feel she was not welcomed there and saying take care to both of them she left.

After Breakfast, Jiang Yuyan asked Lu Lijun to go with her somewhere and Lu Lijun obediently got out of the bed.

When both were going downstairs, the family members present in the living room felt happy and as they reached downstairs, everyone thought these two were going to come towards them but happened otherwise.

Jiang Yuyan straight took the path of the main door of the mansion and it surprised others. Ning Jiahui stood up and wanted to ask where they were going, but before that Jiang Yuyan halted in her tracks, and said, "We will be back soon. No need to worry about us."

Her eyes, not sparing a glance at anyone, devoid of any emotion, darted in the direction of the Mansion's door, her voice cold and ordering one as if she was not asking permission to anyone.

Not waiting for a word to hear from others, Jiang Yuyan left, holding Lu Lijun's hand, leaving others puzzled and worried.

The car was waiting for Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun. It was the one arranged by San Zemin along with the driver, which was one of his men.

Jiang Yuyan instructed the driver where to go and it surprised him. He looked at Jiang Yuyan through the rear-view mirror to make sure what he heard was right and she looked back at him, "You heard right."

The way she looked at him through the rear-view mirror, it was enough for him to not ask more questions and drive the car.

Lu Feng, who was about to go out in his car to send An Tian off and later to meet Jiang Yang and his uncle in the hospital, saw Jiang Yuyan leaving the mansion along with Lu Lijun.

He looked at An Tian who was equally surprised as him. Both immediately sat in the car and followed them.

---

In Su Hui's room.

When Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun out, Qin Xiu went to his mother-in-law, Su Hui's room. Su Hui was calmly sitting in the chair while looking out of the window.

"Mother, Yuyan took Lu Lijun somewhere out."

Su Hui nodded, "Hmm! I know. Let her be as she is worried about him."

Qin Xiu commented nothing further and asked, "Why are you so serious mother? Is something troubling you?"

"Hmm!"

"You can share it with me, mother and I might help you with it," Qin Xiu suggested.

"As Lu Qiang is no more, I am worried about how things will work in the business and the family. Your father-in-law is already troubled with it and working day and night to handle the problems," Su Hui said.

"There are two other men in our family, so don't worry about it. One of them can take Lu Qiang's place. Isn't it what the mother wished for?" Qin Xiu asked.

"I wished for it, but never wished for Lu Qiang's death. I am sad as it feels like I lost my son but we can't keep crying about

it as there are things that meant to be done."

Qin Xiu agreed, "It's sad but we can't change the fact so we have to make one of them take his position."

"It's not that easy. After Lu Qiang's death, everything passed to his wife. So she is the one who holds the power now," Su Hui commented.

"So are you worried that she will take everything with her?" Qin Xiu asked.

"The way she is acting these days, I think she is up to something. Instead of mourning over her husband's death, she looks strong and it's something to worry about."

"Isn't there any way to get this power away from her, mother?"

"There is, but we have to wait for that." It looked like Su had planned something and she was waiting for the right time.

"But, how long, mother? What if she leaves this home taking everything along and get married to someone else? She is still young."

"Soon, once we bury Lu Qiang's ashes, I will make her do what I want." Saying Su Hui closed her eyes leaving Qin Xiu with so many questions.

---

On the way, while following Jiang Yuyan, An Tian spoke, "Take it slow, Lu Feng as we don't have to stop them but to follow them to see where they are going."

Lu Feng listened to An Tian and slowed down the speed.

After crossing four to five kilometers of the distance, Lu Feng felt worried, "Where is she going? After a few kilometers, it's that place."

"Hmm! I guess she is going there only," An Tian replied and Lu Feng didn't know what to say.

"Don't worry. I am sure she knows what she is doing," An Tian assured him.

After some time, Jiang Yuyan's car stopped and it was the place of the accident, as predicted by Lu Feng and An Tian.

Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the car and went to the other side of the back passenger seat door, she asked Lu Lijun to step out.

"Stop here, Lu Feng," An Tian instructed him to stop away from them and Lu Feng did. They could see what Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun were doing.

"Let's not disturb them," An Tian suggested as if he knew what Jiang Yuyan was trying to do. Not saying a word, both sat quietly inside the car.

Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun towards the place where the accident happened. The road had been cleaned and repaired, but still, it showed the traces of the damage had been done.



# 615 Finally, Made Him Cry...

Lu Lijun recognized the place the moment they stopped there, but he didn't question or hesitated to follow Jiang Yuyan. For him, whatever Jiang Yuyan asked him to do was the right thing.

"There, I saw your brother for the last time," Jiang Yuyan spoke, standing beside him and pointing her finger towards the repaired patch of the road.

Lu Lijun looked at where Jiang Yuyan pointed. He had been to this place before so he knew where the accident happened.

Few vehicles were passing by the road but the newly repaired patch of the road was guarded by the barricades, so they could stand there, also it was the sight of the planned accident which yet to be solved.

Jiang Yuyan pointed towards another place which was a few meters away from the previous place she signaled, "And I was there, in my car, looking at him helplessly. He was badly injured and stuck inside his car as it was flipped upside down."

She remembered those bad memories again and Lu Lijun was listening to her.

"He was bleeding and looked in so much pain but he was still smiling looking at me. A huge piece of glass pierced in his stomach."

Saying Jiang Yuyan placed Lu Lijun's hand on her stomach, to show where exactly, "Right here, the glass pieces was stuck here till deep inside in his body."

Tears rolled down from Jiang Yuyan's eyes and Lu Lijun pulled his hand back from her stomach, hearing what she said.

His breathing pace increased a bit and he felt difficulty in breathing with different emotions taking over him but he could not cope with it and resulted in making him anxious.

Though Jiang Yuyan noticed his condition, she didn't give up. With her choked voice, Jiang Yuyan continued.

"I-I could feel his pain just by looking at him and I could only wished if I could be the one to get it and not him. I wanted to go to him and save him, but I couldn't do it, Lu Lijun. I could just look at him helplessly and cry."

More she said, more he was getting anxious, not knowing what to do. He was about to step back and run away from there, but Jiang Yuyan held his hand, making him stand at his place. She showed as if she didn't know what he was going through and what he was up to and continued speaking as if she was determined to make him listen to everything and imprint it in his mind

"Your brother tried to say something to me and I understood half of what he said and a half I couldn't understand. He said he loves me as if he knew he would die right there and it was the last time he could say this to me. I wanted to reply that I love him too, but my words betrayed me. I don't know why, but they couldn't come out and before I could try harder, the car blasted. I couldn't even say those three words to him."

Unknown to her, tears rolled down from Lu Lijun's eyes, he was looking at where Jiang Yuyan pointed before and he could imagine what must have happened.

Standing away from them, Lu Feng and An Tian could hear what she was saying and they both couldn't control the tears from making their way out. An Tian put his hand on Lu Feng's shoulder as Lu Feng was on the verge of crying out loud. He was the one to witness everything along with Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan noticed Lu Lijun's tears but she didn't stop as if it was still not enough.

"His smile which he gave me as if he was saying goodbye to me, I can't forget it. Even in the pain, he was smiling for me and assuring me that everything would be fine. More than his life and his pain, he was worried about me and he was happy that I was being saved. How can he do this and make me regret being alive?"

Soon there was another sound of crying and sobbing other than Jiang Yuyan and that was from Lu Lijun, but she didn't stop and continued.

"Your brother was burning in that car and I could do nothing. How much it must have hurt him? How much pain would he have gone through? In front of my eyes, he was burning into ashes,"

With these words, Lu Lijun broke out into a loud cry and Jiang Yuyan finally turned to look at him. He was crying with his head lowered down and his eyes shut tight.

Cupping his face in her hands to make him look up at her, while she herself was crying, Jiang Yuyan said, "This is the truth, Lu Lijun. Though it's painful, we have to accept that he is dead and not with us anymore...he is dead...your brother is dead....Lu Lijun"

Saying "he is dead" again and again was like piercing her own heart with a knife, but Jiang Yuyan continued saying it until Lu Lijun gave up on his stubbornness of not accepting it. He hugged her and cried like a little kid.

"I want my brother back... bring him back to me...I want him back...." Finally, Lu Lijun said something after so many days while crying and sobbing harder.

"I wish I can do it, Lu Lijun. If so, I would have traded my own life to bring him back alive, but I can't."

Jiang Yuyan hugged him back and cried along with him. These both were the most hurt people after Lu Qiang's death and the ones who could never imagine living their lives without him, but the destiny took a harsh turn and made them lose the most precious person in their lives.

Seeing Lu Lijun crying and talking, Lu Feng and An Tian gave out a sigh of relief and they understood Jiang Yuyan's purpose to bring Lu Lijun to this place, though An Tian already predicted it.

---

Finally, wrote the chapter where Yuyan married Lu Lijun and they are tied to each other...

# 616 Will Wait For The Order...

The driver of Jiang Yuyan's car was giving all the updates to his boss, San Zemin, as instructed by San Zemin himself.

It puzzled Zemin too when he got to know about where Mrs. Lu wanted to go, and he thought why. San Zemin was getting the live updates on his tablet about what Jiang Yuyan was doing. As she was the boss, it was his responsibility to protect her and what he owed to Lu Qiang in the past, made him responsible for his family even more.

Seeing what Jiang Yuyan did surprise San Zemin, and he could only think she was one strong woman. When he got to know about Jiang Yuyan's suicide attempt, he thought of her as any ordinary and weak woman, but seeing all this, changed his perspective towards her. To him, she looked like another Lu Qiang who was ready to do anything for the sake of Lu Lijun and it relieved him seeing what his boss left behind, someone more precious to him, Jiang Yuyan was taking care of him.

Moreover, he was aware of one more side of Jiang Yuyan that only people closer to her knew about. San Zemin didn't think about it much, but now he could feel that the incident happened with his boss is making that side of her to come out. He felt it when she commanded him on the phone.

Jiang Yuyan was one hurt woman who was new to the world where she would enter, but there was not a tinge of hesitation and fear in her when she talked to San Zemin and commanded him as a boss. Instead she looked confident, determined and fierce.

"I will wait for another order from you, boss." The words came out from San Zemin as he looked at Jiang Yuyan on his tablet screen. This weak woman in front of him would rule everything soon.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun continued crying their hearts out. Going through those memories again to make Lu Lijun cry, helped Jiang Yuyan too. Somewhere she too didn't want to accept the reality, but making Lu Lijun accept it by saying Lu Qiang was dead, was like she was telling it to herself too and it would make her strong to fight ahead.

Both spent some time there while sitting on the roadside and continued looking at the place of the accident, not saying a single word to each other and the only thing that was still working was the tears which were rolling down.

Lu Feng and An Tian waited for these two and sat inside the car quietly till these two would head back home.

"Let's go back, Lu Lijun," said Jiang Yuyan as they spent too much time there.

Lu Lijun shook his head, "I don't want to go back," his sight fixed down towards his feet.

"Where do you want to go?" She asked.

"Anywhere but home."

Agreeing to his request, Jiang Yuyan said, "Okay, first let's go from here."

Lu Lijun agreed and sitting inside the car she asked the driver to go to a certain place. Lu Feng and An Tian followed them. Jiang Yuyan knew they were following her, but she didn't mind as she could understand they were worried about her and Lu Lijun.

Soon, they reached one place where Jiang Yuyan used to go with three men in her life when they were kids, Lu Qiang, Jiang Yang, and Lu Feng. Just a few months back she went there with these three and they had fun there like dirty chickens.

Her eyes, which just stopped shedding tears a while ago, turned moist again with the memory and Lu Feng felt the same.

Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun to the tree, which was at some height and the center of that small hill. Both sat there all tired.

Lu Feng finally came there and offered both of them water, as he knew it must have tired them.

Lu Lijun was still silent, looking here and there around the hillside covered in greenery everywhere. It was a pleasant site that could calm anyone's heart and mind. An Tian was standing at the one side and Lu Feng signaled him asking what about Lu Lijun and what to do?

An Tian gave him an assured mild smile saying he was fine and needed no help from the doctor.

They spent a peaceful time there for the sake of Lu Lijun and not talking much, but unaware that there were outsiders who had their eyes on them.

While going down from that small hill, Jiang Yuyan's feet slipped and Lu Feng held her from falling down. It was a normal thing for them, but it was not the same for others who were monitoring them.

Lu Feng sent Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun back home, instructing the driver to be careful. He knew the driver was San Zemin's man and he didn't have to worry about anything. Lu Feng went and An Tian left for the hospital while Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun went back home.

The elders were worried about where Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun must be. Elder Lu was not doing well already and these things were adding to it. They got a call from Lu Feng, informing them about Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun, so they felt relaxed.

When Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan returned, no one asked them anything. That night, Jiang Yuyan brought Lu Lijun downstairs to have dinner with everyone. She was taking each step with him slowly, giving him time to adjust with the things.

On the dinner table, no one talked and it was the totally opposite atmosphere from what it used to be till a few days back, lively and making everyone smile.

No one knew what to talk to Jiang Yuyan and how to console her. If she was crying, then they could have done it, but as she

acted cold, no one knew how to talk to her.

In the night, after putting Lu Lijun to sleep, Jiang Yuyan went to the elder's room. When grandma opened the door hearing the knocking, it surprised her to see Jiang Yuyan in front of her.

"Is grandpa sleeping?" Jiang Yuyan asked. It was the second time elders heard her saying something since she was back.

"He is awake, come inside," saying grandma led her way inside.

# 617 Might Do Something Wrong...

Elder Lu was resting in the bed and hearing Jiang Yuyan's voice, he got up. Jiang Yuyan went inside and the first thing she did was to help elder Lu to sit comfortably by putting the pillows behind for him to rest while leaning back.

"Thank you, dear," elder Lu said and Jiang Yuyan sat at the edge of the bed facing elder Lu.

"I am sorry, grandpa," Jiang Yuyan said and it startled both the elders.

"Why are you saying sorry, dear," grandma asked while elder Lu still didn't know what to say as he could feel Jiang Yuyan's condition and felt short of words.

"For taking your grandson away from you," Jiang Yuyan replied, her eyes facing down and teary.

"You are breaking my heart now." Finally, the elder Lu said something. Tears rolled down from his eyes.

"He lost his life just to save me," said Jiang Yuyan as she broke down into tears.

"What happened is so unfortunate and hurting us all but it was not your fault. He did what he should have done. He was my grandson, and I am proud of him. So don't blame yourself," elder Lu consoled her and grandma agreed to it.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan spoke again, "Also, I am sorry for not being able to take care of you all as I can only see my pain and didn't think about others. I was being selfish."

This broke the elder's heart and grandma spoke, "We should say sorry to you instead as we could do nothing for you and you alone went through it. What you are doing for Lu Lijun, we are already thankful to you."



The moments passed by them consoling each other. Wiping her tears, Jiang Yuyan said, "From now on Lu Lijun and everything Lu Qiang left behind, I will take responsibility for it."

"It's good that you think this way but you should first look after yourself," said elder Lu.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and looked at them both, her face carrying serious expressions, "There is something I want to tell you both,"

"Tell us," both waited for her to say it.

"I might do the things which would be wrong in your eyes, but I need to do it," Jiang Yuyan replied without any hesitation.

This worried grandma and she asked, "Dear, what are you....."

Elder Lu, who was calm, stopped his wife by putting his hand on hers, as she was sitting just beside him. Looking at Jiang Yuyan with the same serious expressions as her, "Are you sure about what you have planned?"

His expressions serious and his eyes looked different from what they looked when he was emotional.

"Yes, grandpa," Jiang Yuyan reapplied.

"Then do what you feel right and if anyone says anything, just remember this old man is always there for you," Elder Lu instructed in his serious voice.

Grandma could just look at both of them. These two were crying and emotional a while ago, but now they are talking so seriously.

"Thank you, grandpa," Jiang Yuyan said it and elder Lu patted her head.

Grandma felt worried to think what Jiang Yuyan was up to but said nothing when her husband had no problem with it,

Wishing them a good night, Jiang Yuyan left the elder's room. Closing the door back, grandma Zhao Shuang went back to elder Lu, her face having worried expressions and her eyes were asking so many questions to the man in front of her.

"Don't worry, she knows what she is doing," elder Lu assured his wife.

"I am worried about her. She is so indifferent and sometimes seems scary, opposite to what the woman should look when her world fell apart," said grandma.

"She is one hurt woman who is no less than a wounded tigress. She is not as weak as she looks. Those who hurt her, have to pay her back," elder Lu commented.

"But what can she do when even the police cannot do anything?" grandma asked.

"Right now she holds the power that surpasses everyone," said elder Lu and grandma looked at him questioningly.

Nodding to her questioning gaze, elder Lu spoke, "Exactly what you are thinking right now. So don't worry."

With this, grandma didn't ask any question to her husband and quietly went to sleep.

Leaving the elder's room, Jiang Yuyan went back upstairs and stopped in front of one room. It was not her room but her mother-in-law's room. Since Lu Qiang died, her mother-in-law visited her in the hospital so many times, but at that time, Jiang Yuyan didn't talk to anyone.

She remembered her mother-in-law's crying face whenever she came to her, but Jiang Yuyan had nothing to say to anyone but keep crying over her loss. Knocking on the door, Jiang Yuyan entered the room where Lu Lian was asking her mother to take her medicines, but Ning Jiahui didn't want to.

Sitting in the chair in front of the glass window while staring at the dark sky blankly, Ning Jiahui's eyes never stopped shedding tears.

"Mother, please stop crying and take this medicine or you will fall sick." Lu Lian, who herself was emotional, seeing her mother, was trying to convince her.

Helplessly, Lu Lian looked at Jiang Yuyan who just entered the room while Ning Jiahui had no recognition of anyone's presence inside the room.

Jiang Yuyan stepped towards her mother-in-law, who was sitting in the chair. Kneeling in front of the chair, Jiang Yuyan sat while resting her head on Ning Jiahui's lap, just like a kid as if that kid wished her mother to console her.

Finally, Ning Jiahui recognized Jiang Yuyan's presence and looked at her with teary eyes. She patted Jiang Yuyan's head as Jiang Yuyan continued sitting with her head resting in her mother-in-law's lap, her eyes closed and tears rolling down from them.

Not saying anything, Ning Jiahui continued caressing Jiang Yuyan's head softly and Lu Lian who was trying to hold her tears back, couldn't stop herself from crying and going to her mother and her sister-in-law.

Lu Lian sat beside Jiang Yuyan. Ning Jiahui hugged both of her girls, and finally, there was a sound of crying and sobbing in the room.

—

To Talk to the author, you can join the discord server made for the readers. The link is given bellow-

<https://discord.gg/xWHqqr>

## 618 The Last Gif

When these three calmed down, Jiang Yuyan lifted her head to look at her mother-in-law and Ning Jiahui wiped her tears with her hands.

"I-I won't say don't cry because I know it's impossible to do so," said Ning Jiahui, her voice heavy and choked.

"Mother, I... miss... him.. I can't live without him...", Jiang Yuyan said, her voice choked as she cried.

"I know..I know..." Ning Jiahui hugged her back.

"I couldn't tell him he would be a father," Jiang Yuyan cried out even louder. "How happy he would have been, mother?"

Ning Jiahui had nothing to say other than crying. She realized this girl in front of her was going through worse pain than what she was going through after her son's death. The girl lost her husband just after a few months of wedding and lost her baby too. It made Ning Jiahui come back to her senses and she tried to control crying for the sake of Jiang Yuyan.

Since Jiang Yuyan came back, it was the first time she cried. She couldn't understand what happened to her, but from Ning Jiahui she got that warmth which made her open her heart. It might be because Ning Jiahui was the one who gave birth to the man she ever loved and he was the part of her.

Jiang Yuyan kept crying for long while Lu Lian and Ning Jiahui continued consoling her. Once she was done. Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lian and instructed, "Bring mother's medicines," and Lu Lian did so.

Ning Jiahui had to take medicine as Jiang Yuyan asked her and she didn't have the heart to say no to her.

"Mother, from now on don't miss your medicines," Jiang Yuyan instructed and Ning Jiahui took the medicines obediently.

"And don't worry about Lu Lijun as he is fine now and would be alright soon," Jiang Yuyan informed her.

"Thank you so much for taking care of him."

"No need to thank me as he is someone that belongs to me too."

Getting up from the floor, Jiang Yuyan gave her mother-in-law her hand to get up from the chair, "You should sleep now, mother."

Nodding, Ning Jiahui went to her bed and Jiang Yuyan covered her with a quilt with the help of Lu Lian.

"Be with mother and don't let her skip medicines," Jiang Yuyan instructed Lu Lian and she nodded.

Jiang Yuyan was about to leave but stopped and stepped towards Lu Lian. Before Lu Lian could ask what happened, Jiang Yuyan hugged her, "I am proud of you for being so strong and taking care of others."

Lu Lian had no words to say. All these days, despite being the youngest one in the family, Lu Lian was taking care of others, forgetting her own pain. She must have cried but must be alone as no one was there to ask how was she doing and she didn't expect anyone to do so. In such a bad time, she acted strong.

---

When Jiang Yuyan went back to Lu Lijun's room, Lu Lijun was in a deep sleep. She tucked his quilt properly, which was thrown away by him in sleep. Patting his head as she was about to leave, she heard him.

"Don't go." His forehead having the furrowed lines.

Jiang Yuyan stopped and turned to look at him, but he was mumbling in his sleep. Sitting at the edge of the bed, she continued patting his head, letting him know her presence and soon those furrowed lines on his forehead disappeared, Lu Lijun turned in his sleep and held her hand tightly as if he didn't want her to go.

Giving up to him, Jiang Yuyan made a place for her in the bed to sleep beside him. The bed was huge, so it was not the problem, Lu Lijun still holding her hand tightly.

---

The next morning, after breakfast, Su Hui asked Jiang Yuyan to stay back in the living room as she wanted to tell everyone about something. Jiang Yuyan sent Lu Lijun back to his room along with Lu Lian and told him she would be back soon.

In the living room, everyone was waiting for Su Hui to say for what she called everyone there.

"I know it's a hard time for the whole family but the things which are meant to be done, we can't leave them."

Everyone was listening to her to say it further and finally, gathering her courage, Su Hui spoke, "We have to go to our ancestral town to bury Lu Qiang's ashes."

Hearing it, everyone felt something stuck in their throats and sat there quietly. They knew Su Hui was right, and even if it was hurting, they had to do it.

Su Hui moved her sight to Jiang Yuyan, "Yuyan, you...."

"When are we leaving?" Jiang Yuyan asked coldly, interrupting Su Hui and it startled everyone.

"Tomorrow, as we have to do it before the fifteenth day of the death," Su Hui replied.

"I will be ready." Saying Jiang Yuyan was about to get up but someone entered the living room that made her stop.

It was Xiao Min who came there holding a huge gift box in his hands. He straight went to Jiang Yuyan and said, "This is for you."

Not accepting that huge gift box, Jiang Yuyan stared at Xiao Min and then to the box, questioningly.

Xiao Min got the meaning and replied, "The night before the accident, the boss called me and asked me to prepare this for you." His voice was shaky as if he would cry soon.

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan accepted the box and put it on the sofa to see what was inside it. Not just her, but others were looking at the box too. It was the last thing Lu Qiang did for her.

She opened the box and went through it. First, there was a large size greeting card that had an animated picture of a baby and a mother. It shocked her to her bones. 'How can this be?' she thought as she looked at the other things inside the box.

# 619 To The Beautiful Wife Ever...

Keeping the greeting card aside, Jiang Yuyan pulled out other stuff from the box. There was one pretty, finely carved tiny, a square-shaped wooden box which seems to be the jewelry box as it had a logo of one famous jewelry brand on it. Jiang Yuyan opened it. There was one tiny note written on a small lavender color paper-

"For the mother to be."

Inside the box, there was a bracelet, a thin, tiny diamond-studded chain and one pretty heart shape pendant hanging to it. It was not the simple pendant, but the one which showed the love and bond between a mother and her child.

The heart shape looked like the body of a woman and it had one circular ring attached at the top which looked like a woman's head. On that woman's body shape pendant, it had another tiny heart shape body carved, a tiny heart with a circular ring shape representing the head, attached to it, making it the tiny version of the shape representing a woman's body. It made it look like a tiny figure which represented a baby.

Tears rolled down from her eyes looking at the greeting card and the gift. The other family members too got what it was and couldn't help but shed tears. No one had the heart to say anything but to look at Jiang Yuyan helplessly.

There were more things in that box. A set of the dress for a baby with tiny socks and shoes with one more note written- "This will suit whether it's a girl or boy"

Tiny rattles and stuff toys were there with one more note written- "It's just a start, soon there would be more of them."

Ning Jiahui, who was sitting beside her, put her hand on Jiang Yuyan's shoulder to console her, but when all were crying,



who could console whom. Each and everyone in the family was feeling the same pain.

Sui Hui, who was acting all rational a while ago, couldn't stop her tears too. More than feeling bad about Jiang Yuyan, she felt sad and hurt on the death of Lu Qiang. Lu Feng didn't know Jiang Yuyan was pregnant and seeing all this shocked him.

When Jiang Yuyan was in the hospital, Lu Feng was busy looking after Lu Lijun and nobody talked about her losing a baby. Lu Feng went out of the mansion with his eyes teary and feeling the pain of Jiang Yuyan.

Unable to control those tears, Jiang Yuyan put everything back inside the box and stood up from the sofa before she would break into the loud cry in front of everyone. Not saying or reacting to anything, she left to go upstairs while carrying that box in her hands. Others could only look at her helplessly while crying when she was making her way to the upstairs.

The moment Lu Feng came out of the Mansion, wiping the tears, he dialed Jiang Yang's number. Before Jiang could say hello, Lu Feng rushed, "Is Yuyan expecting a baby?"

"She was," Jiang Yang replied.

"What do you mean?" Lu Feng asked.

"She lost it after the accident," Jiang Yang replied.

"Why didn't you tell me?"

"It was already so messed up and hurting, that I couldn't come to it, but who told you?" Jiang Yang felt worried and asked, "Is Yuyan all right? Is she crying over it again? Wait for me, I'll be there."

Lu Feng told him what just happened a while ago, and Jiang Yang didn't know what to think about it.

"So, finally he got to know about it," Jiang Yang mumbled and Lu Feng asked, "what do you mean?"

"We thought he didn't know it as Yuyan tried to tell him but she couldn't but seems like he knew it and planned to surprise her." Jiang Yang replied as tears rolled down from his eyes,

"Why did this happen and why all this happening now. I don't know what to do," Jiang Yang broke into the cry.

Lu Feng hung up the call and went to the garden as not knowing how to cope up with all this. He continued sitting there when he wanted to go to Yuyan and console her, but he couldn't.

Jiang Yang was at home after so many days, and he was sitting in the living room with his parents thinking about what to do for Jiang Yuyan. Just like others, they were helpless too and could do nothing but to see her in bad condition. When Jiang Yang told his parents about what just happened in the Lu Mansion, they too had nothing to say but to feel sad.

When Jiang Yuyan reached upstairs, she didn't go to Lu Lijun's room but to Lu Lian's room, which had been prepared for her. Going to the other side of the bed, she kept that box in her hands on the bed and opened it again. She took everything out, getting the feeling of what Lu Qiang must feel when he was preparing these things for her as a surprise.

Her hands touched each and everything carefully as it was a gift from him. She thought about the night when she was trying her best to let him know, but she couldn't.

Picking up the greeting card, she opened it again as she yet didn't read what he wrote inside it.

There was a message printed on it but looked like it was handwritten but later got printed on it. Her teary eyes trying to read what he wrote inside, his last words left for her, which would make her cry even more.

---

To,

The beautiful wife ever,

Thank you so much for coming into my life and painting it with the happiness that I never thought about. I am blessed to have a woman like you and now going to be blessed again by becoming a father of that woman's child. Thank You so much for making me a father. You don't know how happy you have made me and how blessed I am feeling.

Waiting for the day when two tiny feet will make its way in our lives and complete our world.

Thank you so much and love you a lot.

Yours,

Forever Handsome husband.

\_\_\_\_\_

## 620 His Surprise Plan...

After reading the message, Jiang Yuyan broke into the loud cry while burying her face into the greeting card. A memory of that night flashed in front of her eyes when Jiang Yuyan tried her best to tell Lu Qiang about the pregnancy, but she couldn't.

Lu Qiang was standing in the gallery and when Jiang Yuyan went to him, he pulled her into his embrace and hugged her, which startled her. When she asked if everything was okay, he countered asking, can't he hug his wife for no reason?

Lu Qiang hugged her for long as if there was no tomorrow and later even thanked her for no reason. When she asked why he thanked her, he didn't give her an answer.

Jiang Yuyan understood that hug and that thank you was because he already knew about the news but didn't show it. It was clear that he saw the reports kept inside in his laptop when she was in the bathroom and hid it from her.

--

The night before the accident...

Finishing the call with San Zemin, later having a fun argument with Jiang Yuyan and when Jiang Yuyan excused herself to go to the bathroom saying- nature's call, Lu Qiang went to his study table. He opened his laptop as he had some work to finish, but to his surprise; he saw one white envelope kept on the keyboard.

Seeing the name of the hospital on it startled him, but he opened it just to get a sweet surprise. He couldn't believe his eyes and felt like jumping with happiness. Realizing Jiang Yuyan was trying to give him a surprise by letting him know about it like this instead of telling directly, he thought to do something for her too.

Keeping back that report inside the envelope and keeping it just the way Jiang Yuyan left it, Lu Qiang went to the gallery. Looking at the sky he couldn't stop smiling with the thought

of he would be a father soon. So many things flashed in front of his eyes in those few moments, the life after when they will have a child.

In a while, he heard Jiang Yuyan's voice, "What are you doing here? Aren't you working tonight?"

Controlling himself from smiling and having neutral expressions, he looked at her just to instruct her, "You should rest in bed."

In his heart he wanted to go to her, lift her in his arms to show how happy he was and thank her for this but stopped as his plan was to surprise her, not knowing he won't be with her till then to give it to her.

As Jiang Yuyan denied resting, he asked her to come to him and pulled her in his embrace. He was so happy that he felt his love for her will keep going deeper with each passing moment. He was overwhelmed with so many things that he didn't know exactly what he should thank her for. Everything with her seemed so full of life and worth being happy, that he wanted to cherish each passing moment to its fullest.

When Jiang Yuyan fell asleep, Lu Qiang sneaked out of the room to go to the gallery with his tablet and mobile. It was midnight when he called Xiao Min, who was floating in his dreamland.

Seeing the call from his boss at midnight made Xiao Min's sleep runaway and he immediately received it. Before he could say anything, he heard his boss's command.

"I am giving you a very important task to do and I want you to finish it right away."

Xiao Min got out of the bed like the soldier who just got the call to get on the battlefield as enemies have attacked them.

"Yes, boss!" Saying, Xiao Min, started to wear his clothes after putting his mobile on speaker as he knew it was his time to run some errands.

"First, you have to print the greeting card, the same design I emailed you just now and there is a picture of my handwritten note, print it on the message space."

"Okay, Boss!" Saying, Xiao Min grabbed his car key and stepped out of the home carrying his tablet and checking what his boss mailed him. He had to plan according to his boss's orders. He heard the second instruction.

"Go to our usual jewelry showroom and get the same thing, the picture I mailed you. Another handwritten note is there, print it and keep it inside the jewelry box. I have already contacted the manager of the jewelry showroom, you just have to pick it from him."

Starting the car, Xiao Min planned to get a greeting card first and then go to the jewelry shop and he heard one more instruction.

"Go to the baby shop. The name of the shop I mailed you along with the list of what to buy and another hand-written note to print. Pack everything in the nice box and bring it to the office tomorrow."

"Yes, Boss!" Xiao Min replied like the soldier on the duty and spent the remaining hours of the night executing the commands of his boss, not knowing it was the last time he was talking to his boss and it was the last command he got from him.

---

Jiang Yuyan continued crying, looking at the things in the box and the note written by Lu Qiang. Just then she felt two hands around her. She realized someone sat behind her at the edge of the bed and back hugged her.

Jiang Yuyan looked at the hands which were surrounding her and with the small figure sitting behind her, she knew who it was. Lu Lijun let go of her and stood up to stand in front of her, his sight fixed on her face, his face had neutral expressions on it.

Jiang Yuyan didn't want Lu Lijun to see her crying so she immediately turned her face to another side and tried to wipe the tears but Lu Lijun held her hands. Startled, she looked at him and he wiped her tears with his hands.

# 621 Comforting Each Other...

It was something surprising for Jiang Yuyan but as she was so emotional and needed someone beside her; she let Lu Lijun do it, but her tears could not stop. She was sitting at the edge of the bed crying while Lu Lijun was wiping her tears, standing in front of her.

Not knowing what to do to make her feel better, Lu Lijun went closer and hugged her. Jiang Yuyan continued crying, her head resting at Lu Lijun's small chest, and he continued patting her head. Each passing moment, the sound of her loud cry got calmer.

Lu Lian and Ning Jiahui were looking at them standing at the door but no one had the heart to go to her as they would just cry and would make Jiang Yuyan cry more. Lu Lijun was the only one who was calm even after seeing her tears.

In a while, Lu Lijun let her go and picked up the tissue paper box. As he stood in front of her holding a tissue paper box, Jiang Yuyan raised her hand to pull out tissue paper, but before her Lu Lijun pulled out one and wiped her tears. The next thing was more surprising as cleared her nose too.

Jiang Yuyan pulled her face back to not let him do it, but he was being stubborn and the next moment she heard a commanding voice.

"Stay still."

Jiang Yuyan couldn't help but listen to him as if she was a kid, and he was one adult person. When he wiped her nose and went to throw the tissues in the trash can, the memory of Lu Qiang doing the same for her flashed in front of her eyes, making her miss him more.

Lu Lijun went back to her and offered her water. She accepted it and looked calm. Ning Jiahui and Lu Lian gave out a sigh of

relief and left as they were not needed.

"Rest!"

Lu Lijun signaled Jiang Yuyan to lie down in a bed, his voice commanding and his sight fixed on her to make her listen to him.

Jiang Yuyan was exhausted with crying and needed the rest, so she listened to him. Tucking her in a bed, Lu Lijun went to sit on the couch and sat there to look after her the same way she did it for him till now.

That day, Lu Lijun took care of her, acting like the mature person. He brought the lunch for her in the room and when she didn't feel like eating, he even offered to feed her.

"I will eat on my own," said Jiang Yuyan while Lu Lijun held the spoon full of soup in front of her mouth. She was sitting in the bed and the tray of food was kept on the bed table.

Though she said it, there was no change in his sight or in his expression. He continued staring at her while holding the spoon still. Giving up to him, Jiang Yuyan finally opened her mouth.

Jiang Yuyan felt happy that Lu Lijun was behaving like before and there was a good change in him, so she let him do it.

Till then, the whole family understood these two needed no one but each other as they could feel each other's pain because this incident affected both of them equally. When one was in a bad and weak condition, the other one acted strong and comforted the weak one.

It was a relief for everyone as it worried them that it will break Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun will go back to being how he was in the past, in his worst condition.

---

In Xi Cheng's office...In the evening...

The office was deserted with all the employees gone back home.



"Boss, the women are here," Xi Cheng's assistant instructed him.

"Bring them inside," Xi Cheng, who was sitting in his office chair while working, instructed.

In a minute, two women entered his office, one looked in her early thirties and the other one looked so young who didn't even enter her twenties.

The older woman was overly styled, black short dress, long black hair left open with one shiny hairpin tucked at the one side of the hair, her dark brown lipstick and the heavy eye makeup was so loud on her fair skin, adding to it even more.

The young girl was slim, fair and looked innocent. She was wearing a lavender color cute lace ruffle dress which ended up just above her knees, her makeup minimal with her hair tied in the ponytail.

The older woman sat in the chair opposite to Xi Cheng while the younger one stood a few steps back from where the older woman sat, her head lowered down as she peaked at the man in the chair.

"Mr. Xi, I hope this time my girl will be able to please you," the older woman said and Xi Cheng looked at the girl standing beside the older woman.

The girl lifted her head and her eyes met with Xi Cheng's, the grey eyes staring at her which looked like they could see even through her soul.

Xi Cheng averted his sight from the girl and looked at the older woman, "They don't have to do it as I like to have it my own way."

"Mr. Xi, every time I prepare my girls the way you like." Signaling towards the girl standing behind, the woman continued, "Look at her. She is the same as you want, pretty and innocent looking face, wearing a decent cute dress, minimum makeup and not to forget that cute long ponytail which is your favorite."

Xi Cheng looked at the girl again and the older woman continued, "But every time I heard you don't let them touch

you. I just want to know if there is something that is still lacking so I can prepare my girls properly next time."

"You just think about the money you get," Xi Cheng instructed.

"I have it enough after I helped you with the previous task," said the woman carrying a mischievous smile on her face.

=====

More chapters would be here in the next few hours. Today is the day of the reset for the votes and it will start from zero, so don't forget to vote... we need to maintain our rank...

## 622 Say, You Are Mine...

As the older woman finished her lines, Xi Cheng passed her killer gaze and warned, "It won't take me much time to perform the same task to shut your bitchy mouth."

It scared the woman, "I-I didn't mean to offend you, Mr. Xi. I am just looking after the needs of my client."

"If you have done then leave," a cold voice warned the woman calmly, and she got up immediately from the chair.

Going to the younger woman, the older one instructed, "Be good and listen to what he says. I have trained you enough."

The younger one just nodded silently and the older woman left.

Xi Cheng looked at his assistant and the assistant understood.

"This way." Saying, the assistant guided the girl towards the lounge attached to the office and the girl followed him, knowing why she was there.

The Assistant took her inside the lounge and came back just to leave the office. As the assistant left, giving out a deep sigh, Xi Cheng stood up from the chair and went to the lounge.

The girl was standing near the bed as Xi Cheng entered inside. He went towards the coffee table which had a water jug and glasses placed on it and poured the water for himself in the glass.

The girl was taking a peek at him. The man in his early thirties with above-average height, wearing a light brown suit. Neatly combed hair, average looking future but still looked very impressive and intimidating but at the same time scary.

His face looked calm, but that scary look in his grey eyes behind those gold rim spectacles was enough to give anyone goosebumps. The girl couldn't dare to look at him and felt her heart was racing faster. She had been instructed and trained for

what she was there, but his presence couldn't help but make him feel sacred.

"Would you like to have water?"

The girl heard the voice. To her ears, it sounded caring and gentle, but as she looked at the man and her sight met with his, she felt otherwise. Averting her sight from him, the girl shook her head slightly, saying- No.

"Hmm! You might not get it later."

The girl heard him again and looked at him, who was standing taking the support of the coffee table almost half sitting at it, holding the glass of water in one hand and the other hand tucked in a pocket.

The girl suddenly felt her throat went dry but still shook her head saying No. She was confused thinking why she was scared as it was not the first time when she went to someone. Is this man normal? She thought.

"Take off your clothes."

She heard him again and looked at him, puzzled. The man was taking a sip of water slowly, enjoying it as if it was not water but something really tasty.

She was used to seeing the lusty men hovering over her the moment they saw her, but this man was calm and different. In his eyes, there was something that scared her, but it was not the lust and that much she was sure about. Is it a good thing or bad? She thought again, as she felt her heart was pounding faster than usual.

As she continued looking at him with so many thoughts going on in her mind, Xi Cheng spoke again, "Isn't it what you are here for?"

The girl nodded and started to take off her clothes while Xi Cheng stared at her. Under his scary gaze, the girl started to shiver. Once she took off her dress and stood there in just two tiny pieces of clothes, while avoiding to look at Xi Cheng, she heard him again.

"Do I need to specify to take off all the clothes?"

Scared, she immediately took off her clothes and left with nothing. It was not her first time getting seen, but this time she could feel what's the meaning of nudity and felt like covering herself.

"Lie down on that bed on your stomach," Xi Cheng instructed, as he removed his jacket and the tie and started to unbutton his shirt. Taking steps towards the bed, he took off all his clothes just with the tie in his hands.

Lying on the stomach, with her face buried in the pillow, the girl could sense he was coming closer and closed her eyes. The next moment she felt the warm body of the man hovered over her, his body touching her back. She heard a hoarse voice, his lips touching her earlobes.

"You are not allowed to touch me. Keep in mind."

As the girl hummed, nodding lightly, she felt the man held her both hands and move them up towards her head just to get them tied to the bed with his tie. The girl couldn't see what he was doing but could just feel it and later it was difficult as her anxiousness made her lose her senses.

The next moment she felt the man parting her legs and something warm and hard touching her entrance. She knew what it was and shut her eyes tightly just to leave out a loud cry.

This man did nothing with her, no playing with her body to harass her or to have fun with her or didn't even touch her as the other lusty men did. He just went to the direct thing and it surprised her, still not being sure about why he was doing it.

The girl was in pain. Not that she never felt it, but it was so sudden for her even before she could prepare to get it. Xi Cheng leaned down to hover over her and moved with all his might, not letting the girl adjust to the pain, his moves faster and cruel for her delicate body.

It filled the room with her loud cries, which disappeared soon as she adjusted to his pace and his actions. Xi Cheng didn't kiss or try to touch her anywhere with his hands except for his

body touching her back as he moved in and out of her for a long time.

His face again moved closer to her ears and she heard a command in his hoarse voice, "Say, you are mine."

## 623 You Are Mine Nicky...

Xi Cheng's sudden demand puzzled the girl and it took her some time to process what she heard as her body was already dealing with his harsh moves. Moreover, her hands were tied up and she couldn't even see him.

"Say it. Say that you are mine?" The man instructed again, gritting his teeth, panting heavily with his hot breath touching her ears as his hot and sweaty body moved harshly against hers.

The way he said it, it didn't take her time to understand him and not wanting to upset him; she said it while keeping with his forced actions down there.

"I-I am yours."

"Say it loud!"

He instructed again, his voice showing urgency as he didn't want her to delay it even for a moment, the veins on his neck popped out and sweat covered his whole body.

"I am yours,"

The girl said in a bit of a loud voice as much as she could. It was already difficult for her to say a single word as she was pressed below his heavy and strong body, not to forget the harsh thrusts she was getting below which was making it hard to say it clearly and without breaking the words.

As the girl said what Xi Cheng wanted her to say, with few more hard thrusts, he collapsed on her body and the word left his throat as he breathed heavily, his face brushing against the back of the girl's neck.

"You are mine, Nicky. Just mine."

The girl froze as he collapsed and mumbled something to himself. She somewhere felt relieved that he was done and now she can leave the place before this scary man could do anything to her.

Xi Cheng pulled out of her, making her flinch and immediately moved away from the girl as if he got what he wanted and that girl was nobody to him.

He out of the bed while the girl didn't dare to move before he released her hands which were tied with the bed. She was scared her actions might catch his attention again and he will come back to her. His harsh moves already left her sour and she was feeling pain all over her body.

Xi Cheng wore his clothes and went back to the girl to untie her both hands and before she could even take a proper look at him, he left the lounge, not sparing her another glance.

In pain, the girl got up from the bed to wear her clothes as she realized her job was done as the man left. It shocked as it never happened before that any man left her just after having her once and she always had to bear the torture the whole night.

'This man what was he trying to achieve with this when he didn't even touch me properly other than just using me as a prop to relieve himself. What about that huge amount of money he spent?' she thought.

The girl heard about his demands, how the girl should be, and her master especially prepared her to please him but seemed like there was no use.

Xi Cheng went out of his office where his assistant was present. The assistant heard his boss, "Send the girl back."

Saying, Xi Cheng straightaway went to the elevator while the assistant went to the lounge.

What happened was nothing new for the assistant and he knew what he had to do the next. He went to the girl inside the lounge who was ready wearing her clothes and looked in pain. Like every time, the assistant did his job to send that girl back.

---

Ming Rusheng came back to Zi residence in the evening. His uncle was already present in the home and it surprised him to see Ming Rusheng coming back home early and not spending his time in the pubs while drinking till late.



"Nowadays, you are not spending time in pubs and coming back home so early, can I ask the reason?" Zhang Wei said.

"I have decided to be a good man for one woman and to prepare for what I have planned." Replying, Xi Cheng sat on the sofa, opposite his uncle, his legs stretched towards the center table while leaning back on the sofa lazily. He looked happy and peaceful.

"Hmm! For so many days you are staying with me. You should visit your home too, as your mother might be worried about you," Zhang Wei suggested.

Ming Rusheng agreed. "Right! All these days I was not in a condition to go home but as I am fine, I should go home."

"Do it."

"By the way, Uncle!"

"Hmm!"

"Won't you miss me if I suddenly go back home?" Ming Rusheng asked, having teasing expressions but in return, he heard the cold reply from his uncle.

"I won't."

"Why am I feeling like you are planning to bring an aunt for me so you are in a hurry to send me out?" Ming Rusheng teased and Zhang Wei smiled but tried to hide it. "Seems like I gave you too much liberty so you are teasing me, huh?"

"There-there, that's what I wanted to see. Don't you know how handsome you look when you smile, old man."

Zhang Wei threw a cushion at him and said, "I always look handsome whether I smile or not. Also, your uncle is not old yet."

As these both were spending some fun time, there was a knock on the door. The servant opened the door and one man entered inside and Ming Rusheng recognized him.

"Sir, this is for you."

Saying it, the man handed over one huge brown envelope to Ming Rusheng and left.

"What's this?" Zhang Wei asked.

"All my credit cards and a few things,"

"Why? Did you lose your wallet or someone pickpocketed you?" Zhang Wei asked.

Ming Rusheng left out a chuckle, "Who can dare to steal my things, uncle, unless that person has a death wish."

"Then why this..."

"Once I helped someone and had to give my jacket to the person. I was drunk and didn't realize my wallet was in that jacket," Ming Rusheng answered.

—

Today is the reset day for ranking so don't forget to vote...

## 624 I Am The Law, I Am The Punishment...

"Why didn't you just get your wallet back from the person instead of doing this?" asked Zhang Wei.

Giving out a deep sigh, Ming Rusheng replied, "Instead of asking it back, this was the better way."

"Do you dislike the person?"

"Well, not that person but someone related to her."

Zhang Wei exclaimed, "Her? A woman? Jiang Yuyan?"

"If it was Yuyan, then I would have definitely gone back to her as it was a nice reason to see her."

"Then?"

"Leave it, uncle. It's just someone not so important. I am hungry. Let's just eat something."

---

In the Lu Mansion...

After having dinner with the family and putting Lu Lijun to sleep, Jiang Yuyan went to the gallery and called San Zemin.

"Yes, Mrs. Lu." The voice came from the other side of the line.

"I am giving you one week to gather all the information related to the accident and the people involved in it"

San Zemin heard the cold voice of his new boss who directly gave him an order.

"Mrs. Lu. I am already doing it. I just need to gather strong evidence so that we can present it in the court and punish them lawfully," said San Zemin just to hear the mocking chuckle from the other side of the line which surprised him.

"I am the law, I am the punishment."

As Jiang Yuyan said it, her voice sounded evil and her eyes looked scary. San Zemin could just hear her but he could feel what her intentions were, only if he could see the evil darkness in the eyes of his boss.

Getting back to his senses San Zemin said, "Mrs. Lu, there are other few problems."

"What?"

"It's related to the business. Just like in the past when Chairman Lu Jinhai got into an accident, few people created the rucks to take Lu corporations down so we need to take care of it too," San Zemin replied but later he got disappointed in the return.

"I have nothing to do with the business. You can go to others with these things. Uncle, Lu Chen."

"But, Mrs. Lu, he can't...."

Before San Zemin could complete his words, he heard another instruction from his boss.

"Keep everything ready until I come back to the city."

Even before San Zemin could say yes or anything, the call was disconnected.

When Jiang Yuyan was talking to San Zemin and told her last line of instruction, she felt the presence of someone standing behind her and hung up the call just to stand still for a few moments. Till then she knew who it was but didn't want to show the person she knew he was standing behind her and acted calmly.

In a while, Jiang Yuyan turned.

"Lu Lijun, why did you wake up?" she asked, showing as if it surprised her seeing him there.

One could see how fast she changed her expressions in just a few moments. Her evil expressions when she talked to San Zemin and when they changed on the realization of Lu Lijun was standing behind her.

Lu Lijun didn't answer and continued looking at her. When he woke up, he saw the place beside him in the bed was empty and Jiang Yuyan was not in the room. Last time when he woke up, she was in the gallery so he directly went there but he couldn't hear what she said on the call.

Jiang Yuyan went to him and said, "Sorry to disturb your sleep. Let's go back," and they went back to sleep.

Lu Lijun was so used to having Jiang Yuyan around him that her absence for even a single moment was enough to make him anxious when he didn't know where she went. Slowly it was becoming his habit, that would be troublesome for Jiang Yuyan, which she never thought would ever happen.

---

Not getting a positive reply from his boss, San Zemin felt worried about the things which were going to happen in the Lu Corporation. Lu Chen was not that capable of handling the things on the dark side of the business world as he was one simple-minded person and other than Jiang Yuyan as she was his boss, he didn't know who would handle it.

San Zemin made a call, "I want to meet you."

"In half an hour at the intersection before the bridge." The person on the other side of the line said.

San Zemin reached the desired location where the man was waiting for him. The man was standing looking at the river passing under the bridge, his back facing San Zemin.

"Mr. Lu Feng," San Zemin called.

"Why did you want to meet me? If it's about the thing you talked to me at the Lu Mansion that day then my answer is the same."

"Other than you, there is no one who can take the boss's place in Lu corporation. It will fall soon if it continues."

"I told you before, I have nothing to do with the business," Lu Feng declared.

"Mr. Lu Feng, You already know how hard the boss worked to get it this far and it would be sad to see his hard work to end

like this in the hands of his enemies," San Zemin insisted.

There was no reply from Lu Feng so San Zemin continued, "I know what work you do so you are..."

"That's my personal matter. It's nothing to do with me working for Lu Corporation."

"I didn't tell anyone because just like my boss I owed you once but as I know you are the only person who can save Lu corporation, I want to insist you."

"I am afraid that I will just disappoint you with this again. You can take this matter to my father, who is handling everything."

"We all know what is meant by handling these situations. I am sorry to say it but your father is not that capable as he is one simple man and this is the time we need someone like a boss."

"Still, you have no other option but my father," concluded Lu Feng.

"Mrs. Lu doesn't want to look into these things and now you too but ...."

Hearing the word Mrs. Lu, Lu Feng exclaimed, "Mrs. Lu? You mean, Yuyan?"

"Hmm!" San Zemin nodded.

Worry took over Lu Feng's mind and he asked, "When did you talk to her and how?"

## 625 I Will Make Them Pay...

"She is our new boss," replied San Zemin and it shocked Lu Feng.

"What!"

"Yes!"

"Did you ask her to be your boss? How can you do this, San Zemin? Don't you know in what condition she is now?"

"She is the one to contact me after she had gone through the procedure of getting the boss's all the authorities in her hands," San Zemin replied.

"What procedure and what are you talking about?"

Lu Feng was shocked by this revelation as till now he was thinking Jiang Yuyan was immersed in sorrow and she was busy handling Lu Lijun. He never ever thought, unknown to him she would be up to something.

San Zemin told him about the secret file and the authority mail and Lu Feng understood it.

"That means Lu Qiang already told her about all these things and wanted to take charge if the time comes," Lu Feng concluded.

"Looks like it," San Zemin agreed.

"What did she talk to you till now?" Lu Feng asked.

"Same as you. She asked me to investigate everything related to the accident and the people involved in it. She gave me the time of one week." replied San Zemin.

"And are you going to report her all this?" Lu Feng asked.

"She is the boss and this is the protocol."

Lu Feng didn't know what to say as he knew what it meant to be the boss of San Zemin. "Do it then, so that she can put them behind the bars and be in peace."

"I don't think she has any intentions to go by the law," informed San Zemin.

"What do you mean?" Lu Feng's sight was full of questions.

"When I said the same thing as you about going by the law, she brushed it off saying- she is the law and she is the punishment."

"This is not good," mumbled Lu Feng and instructed, "For now listen to what she says but don't tell her anything before informing me."

"Hmm!" San Zemin nodded and after discussing for a while both left.

On the way back to the mansion, Lu Feng was thinking about Jiang Yuyan. He was thinking about what was going in her mind and how come she suddenly thought about going through Lu Qiang's laptop and contact San Zemin.

Knowing her past, Lu Feng was worried if she was planning for revenge. Also, she looked unusually calm since she came back home and at some point it was scary.

When Lu Feng went back home, he straightway went to Lu Lijun's room. He knocked on the door lightly, but as there was no reply from inside, Lu Feng opened the door and entered the room.

He looked at Jiang Yuyan who was sleeping calmly beside Lu Lijun who was holding Jiang Yuyan's hand even though he was in a deep sleep. To Lu Feng, Jiang Yuyan looked totally innocent and harmless that it was impossible to think that she could ever harm someone. He didn't want to believe what she did in the past with the boy to take her revenge.

'I hope you can be at peace and do nothing that will harm you,' thought Lu Feng and left the room.

The whole night Lu Feng couldn't sleep and thought about what to do. He decided to talk to Jiang Yang about it.

—

The next day, all the family members had to leave for the ancestral town to bury Lu Qiang's ashes. Jiang Yuyan packed



her and Lu Lijun's bag and went downstairs, where everyone was waiting for them.

Lu Feng too came downstairs and grandam Zhao Shuang instructed him, with a heavy heart, "Bring the urn from his room."

Lu Feng turned to leave, but the next moment he heard someone and he had to stop.

"I will bring it."

That was Jiang Yuyan. Saying she left to go upstairs in her and Lu Qiang's room, not waiting for anyone to say anything.

The servant was cleaning the room and seeing Jiang Yuyan she made it fast and left the room with all the laundry she collected from there which had Ming Rusheng's jacket in it.

It was the first time when Jiang Yuyan stepped into that room. The moment servant left, the tears she held back left her eyes. Looking around the room with her teary eyes, the moments she spent with Lu Qiang flashed in front of her eyes.

Jiang Yuyan could see Lu Qiang in the room doing various things, working, sleeping, having a coffee while sitting at the window side coffee table and whatever he used to do. It was as if he was alive and she could see him.

The moment she thought to go to him, all the images disappeared. Though she knew it was not real, still, involuntarily her hands moved to touch him.

Jiang Yuyan remembered the day when she said to Lu Qiang - Don't let me miss you so much that I will start seeing you in the images and he promised that he won't.

"Liar! Such a liar." saying, she broke into the loud cry.

Her sight fell on the cremation urn and she knew what it was. With heavy steps, she went to it and held it in her hands.

Holding the urn to her chest while circling her both hands around it, she continued crying. She never thought this day will come when she has to do it.

While crying, the broken words came out from her choked throat, "You.. know..., you are the person I...I hate the most that..... I can't wait to get.... rid of this last... trace of your because.... you...you are ....a liar and...and... I hate lies."

Jiang Yuyan cried a lot as if Lu Qiang would see her and come back to her to calm her down the way he always did.

Wiping her tears and closing her eyes while still holding that urn to her chest, Jiang Yuyan stood silently for a moment. There was no reaction from her for a few moments, but later when she opened her eyes, they looked different from how they looked when she was crying and looked all emotional.

"I promise that whoever made you break your promises with me, I will make them pay for it. I will make them regret proving you a liar in my eyes. I will make them regret why even they were born and came across me."

—

As I am planning for mass release to let you all read Yuyan and Lijun's wedding faster, the number of votes went down... Make sure to vote as I don't wish to cancel the plan of the mass release...

## 626 Ancestral Home...

Su Hui came out of her room with her things as she came across the servant who just cleaned Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan's bedroom. The servant bowed to Su Hui and she was about to go ahead, but Su Hui's sight caught something in the servant's hands.

"Stop!"

As the servant stopped and turned to look at Su Hui, she heard her, "What's that in your hand?"

"This? I found in one jacket from the third young master's room so I am going to give it to...."

"Show me," Su Hui instructed and the servant passed the wallet in her hand to Su Hui.

Opening the wallet, Su Hui checked it and found out it belonged to Ming Rusheng. She looked at the servant and asked again, "Where is the jacket?"

"It's in the laundry room," the servant answered.

"Bring it to me," Su Hui instructed and nodding servant left to get the jacket.

In a while, the servant came and Su Hui took that jacket from her, sent the servant away. Su Hui took that jacket and the wallet inside her room and after some time she went downstairs where others were waiting.

Jiang Yuyan came downstairs carrying a cremation urn in her hands while others were just looking at her, thinking how much it must have hurt her. Though she didn't look at anyone as she tried to hide that she cried, others still could see her wet eyes and red nose.

Lu Feng went to her and offered to get the cremation urn from her, but she shook her head as she wanted to keep it with her. It was the last trace of Lu Qiang's existence, even though it was just ashes.

Jiang Yuyan sat in the car while holding that cremation urn and Lu Lijun sat beside her in the back passenger seat. Lu Feng joined them too as he sat in the Co-driver seat. He didn't want to leave Jiang Yuyan alone in such a condition, and after what San Zemin told him, he was worried about her even more.

As the family members had to go to the ancestral town for the ritual, there were few people who couldn't make it. Lu Chen had to stay back as he had to handle the mess going on the Lu corporation. Jiang Peizhi and Jiang Yang stayed back as Jiang Yang was doing his job as a doctor by looking after Lu Jinhai who was still in a critical condition and Jiang Peizhi thought to stay beside Lu Jinhai as his family.

Mo Ruolan couldn't leave her daughter alone in such condition and went with her. Sitting beside Ning Jiahui, she was trying to console her as her daughter didn't need anyone's attention and wanted to be alone and on her own.

On the way into the car, Jiang Yuyan continued staring out of the window blankly while Lu Feng was observing her and Lu Lijun through the rear-view mirror. When Lu Feng's eyes met with Lu Lijun, he signaled Lu Lijun something through his eyes. It was a small reaction through his sight, but Lu Lijun understood it.

Though Lu Lijun was better now, he still didn't talk to anyone other than just a few words to Jiang Yuyan, so his condition was still something to worry about. Other than Jiang Yuyan, he started to react to Lu Feng too.

Understanding Lu Feng's signal, Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan and spoke, "Water."

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lijun and then at the water bottle in his hand. He was asking her to have water. Jiang Yuyan couldn't say no, even though she was not feeling any hunger or thirst. She accepted it just because it was something Lu Lijun did on his own and she thought of it as a part of the improvement in his condition.

She had water and passed the bottle back to Lu Lijun, "Thank you" and patted his head.

Lu Lijun didn't react to her thank you and looked at Lu Feng as both brothers were communicating through eyes that only they could understand.

It took them half a day to reach the ancestral town as it was far from the city. After so many years the whole family was there but the reason they were there for, was the sad one which made them not so happy about coming back to their real home.

Getting out of the car still holding the cremation urn, Jiang Yuyan looked around as the blurred images from her childhood flashed in front of her eyes when she visited this place in the past. Not just the Lu family but Jiang Family too had roots in the same village but they never visited here after the death of Jiang Yuyan's last relative and that was her grandma.

The Le Family's residence was the typical Chinese courtyard house called Siheyuan. It was positioned around the north-south-east-west axis which comprises several small houses that grouped around one or more central courtyards.

The main house was positioned north but facing south, which was for the head of the family. There were small houses adjoining to the main house, placing east-west called side houses.

Everyone stepped out of the car and they all headed to enter the house. At the entrance, the servants were waiting to welcome them in front of the main gate which was painted vermilion and had copper door knockers on it.

As they entered the gate, there was a screen wall inside that meant for privacy but superstition held that it also protects the house from evil spirits. A pair of stone lions were placed outside the gate.

As they were in the house after so long, they looked around.

The entire house was maintained in the same way, clean and neat. The northern, eastern and western buildings were connected by beautifully decorated pathways. These passages serve as shelters from the sunshine during the day, making one enjoy the calm view of the courtyard in the night.

On the one side, there was a garden that was adding to the fresh and pleasant atmosphere inside the courtyard.

# 627 Happiness Is Always Around...

All came to the main house from where the servants helped them to go to their rooms by carrying everyone's bags.

The main house had a Traditional Chinese interior. Wooden and bamboo made vermilion polished furniture, the floor covered with carpets with traditional prints having mostly red color in it.

At the one side of the room, there were two chairs centrally placed meant for an elder couple, exactly opposite to the entrance and other chairs arranged in two rows perpendicular to main two chairs and those two rows faced each other. The ceiling had two traditional-looking chandeliers, covering the half part of the ceiling equally by each one.

Grandma asked Jiang Yuyan to give her the cremation urn, which she was still holding in her hands. Obediently, Jiang Yuyan passed it to grandma and she kept it at a safe place.

They had given the room in the side house to Jiang Yuyan which Lu Qiang used when he was a kid of which she had few blurred images in her mind.

While going to the rooms, Lu Lijun tagged Jiang Yuyan to go with her, even though there was a different room prepared for him.

“Lu Lijun, You can come with me,” said Lu Feng as they were going to the side houses through the decorated pathway and Lu Feng's room was staying in the side house just beside theirs.

Not saying anything, Lu Lijun held Jiang Yuyan's hand as saying he wanted to be with her. Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng as assuring him it was fine.

Nodding, Lu Feng went to his room and Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun went to Lu Qiang's room. The interior of the room was

similar to the main house, vermilion painted wooden furniture, carpet on the floor.

The bed which could accommodate two people comfortably was at one side of the room, attached to one wall. The bed had a wooden ceiling to which the netted curtains hung to cover the entire bed from all the sides.

Lu Lijun's bags were moved to Jiang Yuyan's room and he was happy that he could stay with her.

The next day there was a ritual of burying Lu Qiang's ashes and everyone went to the family cemetery. Once it was done, everyone left while Jiang Yuyan kept sitting there for a while to say goodbye to him.

From the cemetery, they headed to the temple to pray for Lu Qiang's soul to rest in peace and there was a small ritual for which the main master of the temple had been called to the village temple.

That was the same monk that Mo Ruolan met twice to discuss the future of her daughter. After praying when everyone was outside of the temple premises and the master came out too, Mo Ruolan went to him, having so many questions in her mind about her daughter's future.

Master already recognized Mo Ruolan and he welcomed her with a pleasant smile.

Mo Ruolan bowed to the master and asked, "Everything happened as the master had predicted but what will happen in the future. Till when will my daughter have to suffer like this?" her eyes teary, her voice heavy.

"One's destiny lies in their hands. We can't change it," replied the master, carrying the same pleasant smile, his sight observing Jiang Yuyan who was sitting silently on one bench in the temple premises.

"Why is she suffering since she was so young? Finally, she found her happiness and she lost it again. In her destiny, is there no happiness?" Asked Mo Ruolan, worry and sadness painted on her face.



“Happiness is always around and it will find its way towards that one on its own when the time comes.”

Master said as his sight passed across Lu Lijun, who went to Jiang Yuyan and sat beside her silently. Both were looking at somewhere far at the hills behind the temple, not saying a word, as if just being beside each other was enough.

Master's words lightened up a small hope in Mo Ruolan's heart and she asked not knowing what the master's sight was observing, “That means, she will get someone in life who will give her back what she lost.”

Master didn't reply to her and instead kept silent, his sight fixed on two hurt and aloof souls sitting on the bench. Getting the unspoken answer from the master, Mo Ruolan bowed to the master and he left.

The day went by quietly, everyone being unknown to what the next day would bring for them.

---

The next day, after breakfast, everyone was in the main house's living room when Su Hui said something that shook everyone.

Elders were sitting into the chairs for the heads of the house while others were sitting in two rows of chairs that faced each other. Jiang Yuyan was with Lu Feng and Lu Lijun outside in the garden as Lu Lijun pulled her out.

“Father, I have something to say,” said Su Hui as everyone looked at her.

“Hmm!” Nodding, elder Lu gave her permission and she spoke. “What I will say, you might feel I am being in a haste but eventually we have to think about it.”

As she said it, everyone waited for her to continue.

“It's about Yuyan. My heart hurts to see her like this and such a disaster she had to face at such a young age.” Saying Su Hui looked at Mo Ruolan who looked emotional to hear it and others present there too, felt the same.

“We should decide on her future before it’s too late. We should find a nice man for her and give her another chance to get her happiness instead of letting her be in our home, sad like this.”

Before elders could say anything, their sight fell on Jiang Yuyan who was standing at the entrance of the living room was exactly opposite to where elders were sitting. She looked like she heard Su Hui, but she was waiting for the elders to say something.

## 628 I Will Not Marry Ever...

“Our home, huh?” Ning Jiahui exclaimed, as she was unhappy with Su Hui’s remarks and declared, “Our home is her home too, Su Hui.”

Su Hui was not a bit affected by the unhappy response and glares she was getting from others and continued calmly.

“I never said it’s not her home, elder sister. Instead, now she is the daughter of the Lu family and it makes us more responsible towards her. Am I wrong?” Su Hui asked, nonchalantly.

Before anyone could say anything, they heard the cold declaration from Jiang Yuyan, “I will not marry anyone ever.”

Jiang Yuyan’s face looked calm, but there was a storm inside hearing what Su Hui said. How could she ever think about going to someone else and how could she go away from what Lu Qiang left behind and had his presence in every bit of it. Though he was not with her, she wanted to be with him by being beside what belonged to him.

Jiang Yuyan’s words didn’t affect Su Hui and she said, “I can understand you dear but few things are there that only elders can understand.”

“I said, I will not marry ever and it will never change,” Jiang Yuyan declared coldly as she stepped closer to where everyone was sitting and stood in front of Su Hui to show her strong protest.

“Then you have to go back to your parents’ home,” Su Hui said looking into Jiang Yuyan’s eyes, not hesitating or thinking about what Jiang Yuyan and others would feel.

This made Ning Jiahui lose her temper. “Su Hui, how dare you say this to Yuyan? She is my daughter-in-law and I will decide for her.”

Ning Jiahui exploded in anger while Jiang Yuyan could do nothing but look at this heartless woman in front of her, in a

shock.

Mo Ruolan's eyes turned teary while elder Lu felt uneasy with this sudden move by Su Hui. He was already unwell and Su Hui was making it difficult while grandma held her husband's hand to calm him down.

"Elder sister, I know she is your daughter-in-law, but because of her my son's name might get spoiled so it's my right to show concern over the things."

These words from Su Hui puzzled everyone.

"Your son? What do you mean?" Ning Jiahui asked.

"I didn't want to bring this in front of everyone but it looks like I have no other option." Saying Su Hui picked up her cell phone from the chair and showed something to Ning Jiahui.

"I am talking about this, elder sister. Now you tell me what does it look like?" Su Hui asked.

Seeing what was in the cell phone, Ning Jiahui's eyes left wide open. Su Hui showed it to others and they felt shocked too. When, in the end, Jiang Yuyan saw it, she had no words to say.

It was a picture from the day before when Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun to the place where she used to go with Lu Qiang and the other two men in her life. It was the day when she made Lu Lijun cry and later he demanded to go somewhere.

In the picture, it showed that Lu Feng was holding Jiang Yuyan in his arms and it showed the unusual closeness in the wrong way when there was no such thing. Lu Feng just saved her from tripping down on the slope, but exactly at the same time, someone clicked the picture to misinterpret it.

As it shocked everyone, Su Hui continued.

"This picture would be today's headline news. The owner of the news agency has good relations with Lu Corporations so he showed it to my husband and he stopped it."

Mo Ruolan couldn't take how her daughter's image was getting spoiled and came forward.

“This is someone’s scheme to spoil my daughter’s name,” said Mo Ruolan as she stood beside her daughter being a protective mother.

Ning Jiahui agreed to what Mo Ruolan said, “I trust Yuyan as much as I trusted my son. Whoever did this, we will get that person out and punish them accordingly.”

Su Hui agreed to what the other two women said. “We all know Yuyan very well, elder sister, but we can’t stop others from interpreting it otherwise. Until when we can stop it? Lu Feng is a man and it won’t affect him, but what about Yuyan? I am worried about her.”

There was no stopping this conversation and elder Lu was feeling uneasy. Finally, grandma spoke in a loud voice which she did hardly in her entire life.

“Su Hui, stop this right here. We can discuss this later,” grandma ordered but who could stop Su Hui and she said, “I am sorry, mother, but let me finish it today because it is something that concerns our family’s reputation and Yuyan’s image.”

Elders had to give up in front of Su Hui as the conditions were not in their favor and they left it to Ning Jiahui and Mo Ruolan while Qin Xiu was sitting silently waiting for her mother-in-law to finish what she planned.

“There is one more thing I want to ask Yuyan,” said Su Hui and Jiang Yuyan and others looked at her to know what.

“We all know, Lu Qiang was never a friend of Ming Rusheng and there was hatred between them even after they became relatives, so what were his jacket and wallet doing in your room?”

Hearing it, no one knew what to say while the two younger girls, Lu Bao and Lu Lian standing at the one side of the room witnessing this hurtful drama, felt as if the sky fell on their head.

If Su Hui and others in the family got to know how Ming Rusheng’s jacket came inside their home, then these two

would be in trouble. Others might let them go, but Su Hui wouldn't.

“What are you talking about, Su Hui? What does Ming Rusheng have to do with it?” Ning Jiahui asked as she could not understand why and what Su Hui was trying to do while Jiang Yuyan was silent, not willing to answer it.

## 629 Sending Her Away...

Seeing Yuyan silent, Su Hui felt as if she had caught on to the right thing, her eyes brightened up with the happiness hidden in them and her lips carried a hidden smirk.

“Answer me, Yuyan,” Su Hui instructed.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan troubled with this, Lu Lian stepped forward to tell everything that happened and to clear how Ming Rusheng’s stuff came into their home, but before that Jiang Yuyan spoke up, signaling Lu Lian to stop through her sight.

“I need not explain the things that are not needed. Moreover, brother Rusheng is my cousin so there should not be an issue with this.”

Su Hui left out a light mocking chuckle as she was not satisfied with Jiang Yuyan’s reply.

“Yuyan, dear, he is your distant cousin and not the real sibling. Today this picture with Lu Feng came out and tomorrow we might get to see it with him. I know you are not like that kind of person but we can’t stop others from misinterpreting things when a young and pretty woman who is a widow gets seen with the men. Do you want to tarnish our family’s name?”

“Enough, Su Hui. Dare to say one more word against my daughter.” Mo Ruolan exclaimed. She looked fierce like a tigress and her anger was at its limit. Till now she was trying to control considering the elders, but it was a limit for her now.

“I am not against your daughter, sister Ruolan. Instead, I am trying to protect her from the problems that she might have to face and those are not good for her.” Su Hui countered.

“You don’t have to worry about my daughter anymore. Her mother is still alive to do so. I am taking my daughter with me right at this moment.” Mo Ruolan declared, not willing to listen to a single word against her daughter.

“Mo Ruolan, please calm down. Yuyan is my daughter too and I promise I will take care of her, trust me. Don’t take decisions in haste.” Ning Jiahui pleaded.

There was no change in Mo Ruolan’s angry expressions. “I can trust you, sister Jiahui, but I can’t trust others with my daughter. She had enough of everything and I am taking her with me.”

Seeing Mo Ruolan adamant on her decision, tears rolled down from Ning Jiahui’s eyes as she said, “My son’s soul won’t be in peace seeing his mother can’t take care of the person whom he loved the most... and.... what will I answer to her father-in-law when he will wake up? Don’t take her away from us?”

Ning Jiahui pleaded.

Seeing the things getting worse, elder Lu finally got up from his chair. Managing to walk somehow, he went to Mo Ruolan while holding his wife’s hand for support.

Standing in front of Mo Ruolan, elder Lu spoke, “I desperately want to say that don’t take Yuyan away from us but seeing all this, I want you to take her with you. I don’t want her to go through all this, which will just give her pain.”

Elder Lu’s eyes teary and his voice shaky with how much hurt he felt with the things.

“Grandpa,” Yuyan, who didn’t react to anything, finally spoke up. “I can’t leave our home. I....”

Turning to look at Jiang Yuyan, elder Lu interrupted her, “I know what you want to say and what you are worried about, my dear but for me, nothing is more important than you and your pain.”

Finally, those tears rolled down from elder Lu’s eyes which he was holding back and continued, “Forgive this grandpa for being so weak when you needed my support the most. We will take care of Lu Lijun. Just go with your mother.”

It shocked Jiang Yuyan and tears rolled down from her eyes as she wished to beg to not send her away.

Ning Jiahui did not agree with her father-in-law and tried to make him change his decision, “Father, how can....”



“Let her go, Ning Jiahui. This is the right thing to do.”

This time grandma Zhao Shuang spoke as she agreed with elder Lu’s decision, and she could see why her husband took this decision.

Elder Lu continued as he looked at Mo Ruolan, “You can take Yuyan with you right away. The car and the driver would be ready for you and my apology that she had to face this in my family when she should have been treated like a delicate flower.”

It relieved Mo Ruolan that elder Lu could understand her and didn’t try to stop her. She bowed to him lightly as saying thank you.

Jiang Yuyan broke into a cry and begged while sobbing, “Grandpa, I..I...don’t want to go. Please... don’t send me away. Please grandpa....”.

Jiang Yuyan pleaded with her teary eyes, but till then elder Lu turned his back on her. He knew, if he had looked at her, he would melt and might take his decision back that he didn’t want to.

Stepping away from her, Elder Lu spoke, “If you want this grandpa to live a few days more, then do what I have told you.”

It was the order from elder Lu and Jiang Yuyan couldn’t say no to it. As Mo Ruolan held Jiang Yuyan’s hand tightly to leave the place just then there was a loud sound that shocked everyone and their sights followed its source.

Lu Lijun was standing at the door and there were pieces of a vase on the floor around his feet. He looked angry, and his breathing was heavy as if he would explode soon.

“Lu Lijun!”

Ning Jiahui and Jiang Yuyan exclaimed together. They dashed towards him and others felt worried to see him like this but Su Hui looked calm and looked at her daughter-in-law as if they were not worried about what had just happened.

“What happened Lu Lijun?” Ning Jiahui asked worriedly,  
“Are you hurt somewhere?” Saying, Ning Jiahui tried to check  
her son, but he brushed his mother’s hand and stepped back.

Not answering, he stood there clenching his fists tightly, his  
eyes fixed at the floor while breathing heavily.

—

Request to the premium readers- Kindly use coins to unlock  
chapters as it will help the author... XOXO

## 630 Don't Go...

Seeing Lu Lijun flare-up in anger, Jiang Yuyan understood what was the problem and said, "Calm down, Lu Lijun," but there was no use.

Not reacting to them, Lu Lijun moved to another table on the other side of the door just to throw the one more vase on the floor. He threw it on the other side from where these two women were standing so it didn't hurt anyone.

Both the identical, medium size porcelain vases kept on the wooden stands on either side of the door shattered into the pieces.

Ning Jiahui hurried to stop him from breaking other things and before he hurt himself, but the moment Ning Jiahui held his hand, he pulled it back with the strong tug and moved to other decorative things in the living room kept in the wooden shelves. His intentions were clear.

Lu Feng, who was talking on the phone, heard the chaos and rushed to go inside. His elder brother, Lu Han left to go back to the city after all the rituals finished as his father, Lu Chen needed his help so only Lu Feng had left behind to take care of everyone.

Entering the living room, Lu Feng saw Lu Lijun was angry exactly the way he used to be in the past and it worried Lu Feng to think what must have happened.

"Lu Lijun, calm down," said Lu Feng as he stepped towards him but Lu Lijun was not in a mood to listen to anyone and stepped towards the wooden shelves while the others followed him to stop.

"Lu Lijun, elder brother is here. Tell me what happened and we will sort it out. I promise I will listen to you."

Lu Feng tried to convince him with words as there was no use of stopping him with the force. It would only make him angrier.

Acting as if he didn't hear Lu Feng, Lu Lijun held one wooden showpiece from the shelf to throw it, but before he could do it, Jiang Yuyan hugged him immediately.

Lu Lijun tried to get out of her hold, but he didn't use much force and looked like he didn't mind her hugging him.

Holding Lu Lijun tightly in her embrace, not letting him go away, the words left out with the tears rolling along her cheeks, "I am sorry. I am really sorry, Lu Lijun. Please calm down...Please...I am sorry..." Her voice choked as she couldn't stop crying.

As if Lu Lijun just wanted to hear it from her, he stopped struggling and stood calmly.

It puzzled everyone that why Jiang Yuyan apologized to him but seeing him calm no one asked anything. His hand that had raised up to throw the thing, lowered down and he gave up, not resisting the hug from Jiang Yuyan.

Patting his head, she said again, "Calm down, please," and others gave out a sigh of relief, seeing he was listening to Jiang Yuyan.

As Lu Lijun circled his short arms around Jiang Yuyan to hug her back like a kid hugged his mother, they all heard him saying, "Don't go."

He was crying and his grip tightened around Jiang Yuyan as he said it and looked like he didn't want to let her go, ever.

"I won't. I am sorry for trying to break my promise. I will be with you always." Jiang Yuyan said and finally, Lu Lijun let go of her.

Jiang Yuyan had promised Lu Lijun that she would always be with him and never leave him alone but when Lu Lijun saw others forced her to leave and Jiang Yuyan was about to leave with her mother, he didn't know how to stop her and the thought of her breaking her promise and going away from him, made him angry.

No one could say anything as there was no way they could handle this situation but Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan looked at elder Lu helplessly, as if begging him to change his decision.

Elder Lu couldn't say anything and went back to his room with his wife.

"Let's go to our room," Jiang Yuyan instructed looking into Lu Lijun's eyes as she wiped the tears on Lu Lijun's cheeks and Lu Lijun nodded while looking back at her.

Mo Ruolan, who was firm on the decision of taking her daughter back with her, couldn't say anything too and thought to wait for some time thinking they would convince Lu Lijun in another way.

Ning Jiahui, on the other hand, felt relieved as somehow, Jiang Yuyan stopped though the reason was not something to be happy about.

Lu Feng followed Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan to their room, but Jiang Yuyan stopped him, "No need to follow us. I will take care of him."

Jiang Yuyan's voice was cold and she didn't even look at Lu Feng as if he was an unwanted person for her. It surprised him as they both were taking care of Lu Lijun together and Jiang Yuyan never stopped him from doing so.

Not willing to go against her wish, Lu Feng stopped. Seeing them walking away from him, Lu Feng's thoughts wander around to think about what had happened suddenly.

When Lu Feng entered the living room, everyone present was worried and shocked but his mother. He knew where he could get the answer to his question. After making sure Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun back to their room and closed the door, Lu Feng left to go to his mother's room.

—

Su Hui's bedroom...

"Mother, why did you ask Yuyan to leave? Do you really want her to leave the Lu Mansion?" Qin Xiu asked as she sat in one chair in the room while Su Hui sat in another chair opposite to her.

“I don’t want her to leave. She is still a family, even though Lu Qiang is not with us.” Su Hui replied.

“Then, mother, why did you.....”

“You will understand it soon, Qin Xiu,” Su Hui interrupted, her eyes brightened up as if the things were going exactly the way she planned.

—

There would be a mass release on Sunday as our novel has participated in the MASS RELEASE EVENT. You will see the novel featured there on Sunday, so I wish you all to go to the mass release event page in the app and comment or say something about our novel...

# 631 Then, Why Don't You Marry Her?

Qin Xiu couldn't understand what his mother-in-law, Su Hui had planned and expressed her concern.

“Mother, If Yuyan leaves the family, she will take all the property and power with her that she got from Lu Qiang and it is much more than anyone else in the family has. What if she really marries someone in the future, then?...it will go to the person she will marry and...”

“Don't worry about it, Qin Xiu. Lu Lijun will not let her leave this family, not at least for some time,” Su Hui replied.

“But one day she will leave for sure. Then what will we do?” Qin Xiu countered.

“Everything I am doing is just to keep her in the family forever,” Said Su Hui that surprised Qin Xiu.

“Huh? And how are we going to do this? I thought mother wanted her to leave our house.”

Before Su Hui could answer Qin Xiu, there was a knocking on the door and Lu Feng entered inside the room without waiting for permission to do so.

“Mother, what did you do this time?” Lu Feng asked, not waiting for a moment.

“What did I do, Lu Feng?” Su Hui asked nonchalantly.

“Mother, I don't know what exactly happened but I am sure you have something to do with it. Why was Lu Lijun angry? Did you say something to Yuyan?”

Lu Feng knew if Lu Lijun was this angry then there must be something that must have upset him greatly and there was only one way to do it and that is by hurting Jiang Yuyan.”

“I just showed my worry towards Yuyan as I genuinely feel bad for her,” Su Hui replied pretending as if she did nothing

wrong.

“And how did you do this, mother?” Lu Feng asked, knowing it was not as simple as his mother said.

“I just suggested everyone to not keep her alone as a widow in our home and we should find someone for her so that she can forget her sorrow,” Su Hui explained.

Hearing it, Lu Feng exclaimed, “Mother, how can you say such a thing at this moment when it hasn’t even been a half month since she lost Lu Qiang. How can you...”

“She will always be sad by thinking about him so there is only one way to get her out of it. Also, she is so young to be a widow. I want her to find her happiness,” Su Hui concluded.

“You could have waited for this? Can’t you see what happened with Lu Lijun?” Lu Feng questioned.

“What happened with Lu Lijun, it’s not my fault. I just proposed what I thought was better for Yuyan, but her mother wished to take her back because Yuyan doesn’t want to marry anyone. When Lu Lijun saw her leaving, he reacted like that,” Said Su Hui, still, relaxing in the chair and ignoring how Lu Feng was feeling about everything.

“By doing this, you just want to send her away from our house as you know she will say no. How can you be so heartless?”

“Lu Feng, My Purpose is to protect our family’s reputation by not letting anyone harm it and I can do anything to protect it.”

“But what does our family’s reputation have to do with Yuyan marrying someone and getting out of our home?”

As Lu Feng asked this, Su Hui showed Lu Feng the picture she showed to other family members before. It surprised Lu Feng as much as it surprised the others.

“This.....” He couldn’t say anything further as it was way too shocking, so Su Hui continued.

“I know it is not what it looks in the pictures because I know there is nothing like this but if this picture was in the news today, what would have been the outcome of it? More than the



family's image think about how it would have hurt Yuyan," Su Hui asked.

Lu Feng continued looking at the picture in a shock and he remembered the way Yuyan asked him not to follow her and Lu Lijun and thought, 'So this was the reason.'

Ignoring what his mother said, her fake worry about Jiang Yuyan, Lu Feng looked at his mother and asked, "Mother, are you that desperate to send Yuyan out of this home?"

"I don't want to send her away. Instead, I want her to keep her with us." These words from Su Hui were contradictory to her actions so Lu Feng asked, "Then what did it mean when you want her to marry someone. If she marries someone, then she has to go away."

"If it is what we have to do to make her happy then we have to do it," said Su Hui, not willing to accept her fault.

"This is her home, mother. How can you think about sending her away?" asked Lu Feng just to hear something more shocking from his mother, who was still sitting calmly in her chair.

"Then, why don't you marry her, Lu Feng?"

His mother's words were so shocking for him that he couldn't say a word but stare at his mother. It was the thing Lu Feng never even thought in his dreams once he accepted Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan's relationship. For him, she was just a wife of his brother.

Getting Lu Feng's silence as his approval, Su Hui continued, "You like Yuyan so what's bad in it. You know, no one can take care of her better than you. Marry her and we won't have to worry about her leaving this house or about her family's image or about her wellbeing."

There was nothing Lu Feng could say. Closing his eyes just to give out a deep sigh, Lu Feng spoke, "Mother, you are making me hate you even more."

Saying Lu Feng left the room while Su Hui didn't react. Qin Xiu, who was silently listening to these mother and son,

finally spoke, “So mother, do you want Yuyan to marry Lu Feng?”

Su Hui nodded, “Hmm! That way she would always be in our family.”

## 632 He Needs Me...

“Hmm!” Qin Xiu agreed and heard her mother-in-law again.

“Also, this way, what Yuyan got from Lu Qiang will come to Lu Feng and it will compel him to step into Lu corporations and take Lu Qiang’s position even though he doesn’t want to.”

Su Hui’s plan surprised Qin Xiu, “Mother, I never thought so deep. I am so impressed with what you thought.”

“This is not the only reason. I want Yuyan to marry my son because my son likes her so if they marry, he will find his happiness,” said Su Hui and Qin Xiu agreed, “Right, mother.”

To Qin Xiu, her mother-in-law sometimes looked like a greedy woman who wants power and money, but the next moment she looked like a mother who wants nothing else but her son’s happiness.

“But mother, we could have done it a little late. I mean, it’s kind of cruel to ask her to marry Lu Feng at this moment.” Qin Xiu’s eyes carried guilt in them, but it was not the same case for her mother-in-law.

Giving out a deep sigh while leaning back comfortably in the chair, Su Hui replied, “She is the woman who will never ever think about any man. If we want her to do it, then this is the right time.”

“How?” Qin Xiu asked curiously.

“Lu Lijun is her weakness as he is what Lu Qiang left for her and just to take care of him and to be with him she would do anything. Right now, Lu Lijun is in bad condition, and he needs her. We just have this one chance and later it would be so late.”

“You are right, mother. The way she is protecting Lu Lijun and suppressing her own pain, it’s clear that after Lu Qiang, Lu Lijun is the most important person for her,” Qin Xiu concluded.

“Hmm! Hit the iron when it’s hot to bend it into the shape you want.”

Su Hui mumbled, staring at the window, her sight carried the hint of how satisfied she was feeling with the thought of her son being a most powerful man and she spoke.

Finally, my son... my Lu Feng will get everything he deserves, power, position and the woman he likes.”

—

At lunchtime, Su Hui and Qin Xiu went to the dining room but other than these two no one came out of their rooms and preferred to have it in their rooms. Lu Feng was not in the home as he left the home in the frustration after talking to his mother.

Mo Ruolan and Ning Jiahui were together and they came out to go to Jiang Yuyan’s room to check on her and to see what was the situation with Lu Lijun.

When they knocked on the door. Jiang Yuyan was sitting on the bed beside Lu Lijun, who fell asleep after having lunch, and Jiang Yuyan was patting his head. Her face carried worried expressions as she continued looking at him.

Hearing the knock on the door, Jiang Yuyan opened the door and saw two women standing in front of her. She stepped out and slowly closed the door, not willing to wake up Lu Lijun.

Those three walked away from the side house and went to the central courtyard.

“How is he?” Ning Jiahui asked.

“Calm for now,” Jiang Yuyan replied.

Mo Ruolan didn’t know what to say. She wanted her daughter to pack her stuff and leave the house, but she could not come to it. Just then Su Hui and Qin Xiu came there.

“If he is fine, you can leave with your mother as father has already arranged a car and a driver for you,” Su Hui instructed, her face devoid of any sympathy for Jiang Yuyan while Qin Xiu somewhere felt bad about it.

“Su Hui, stop it. Don’t make me cross my limits with you. I am the elder daughter-in-law of this house and my decision values more than you and I have decided that Yuyan will stay with us,” Ning Jiahui declared but Su Hui was still the same.

“Father is older than us all and his decision is to send Yuyan with her mother. Are you still going to oppose it, elder sister?” Su Hui asked that left Ning Jiahui speechless.

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan ran inside the main house. She went directly to elder Lu’s bedroom where he was sitting on his bed while staring blankly outside of the window, his expressions sad and his eyes moist. Grandma was sitting beside him trying to console him with her presence, her eyes were moist too.

Knocking once, Jiang Yuyan entered the room and stood opposite to the bed, looking at the elder Lu with her teary eyes and catching her breath as she came running.

“Grandpa, Lu Lijun is not well. Please don’t send me away,” Jiang Yuyan pleaded, but elder Lu didn’t even look at her.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t give up and stepped to sit on the edge of the bed, “Grandpa, please look at me. Please let me be with Lu Lijun. He needs me. If something happens to him, then Lu Qiang will never forgive me. Please grandpa.”

Finally, the elder Lu looked at her and spoke, “And Lu Qiang will never forgive me if I let you suffer like this.”

“I will be a fine grandpa, I promise. Just let me be with Lu Lijun.” Crying, Jiang Yuyan pleaded again, but elder Lu looked firm on his decision and averted his sight from her.

Just then four ladies came to elder Lu’s room too and Su Hui said, “Father, the car and the driver are ready as you have instructed.”

Mo Ruolan and Ning Jiahui couldn’t say anything. Though Mo Ruolan was sad seeing her daughter, she was relieved to take her back while Ning Jiahui knew she couldn’t oppose the elder Lu’s decision but to shed tears.

Mo Ruolan went to her daughter and asked her to go with her but Jiang Yuyan continued crying shaking her head to show

her denial but still Mo Ruolan made her stand up by holding her at shoulders.

=====

There is one contest for the readers in the mass release event. Write the best review on the novel and if the review gets selected for being the best, the reader will win something from webnovel.

(Note- it's writing a review and not the comment)

## 633 Marry Me...

Crying and sobbing, Jiang Yuyan looked at her mother as her last hope. “Mom...If he won’t see me, he might harm himself. He needs me...mom,” said Jiang Yuyan, but her words didn’t make any difference and Mo Ruolan made her walk.

Walking slowly with her mother, when Jiang Yuan reached where Su Hui was standing, she stopped.

With her teary eyes, Jiang Yuyan looked at Su Hui and pleaded, “Aunt, please ask grandpa to not send me away.” Saying Jiang Yuyan knelt down in front of Su hui while crying and sobbing as if she was begging her.

As Su Hui was the person who created these conditions, so she was the only one who could have changed everything as her words and accusations carried a weight that led the conditions to this point. Jiang Yuyan had no other option but to beg her.

Seeing this, everyone’s heart broke, but Su Hui was still calm. Leaning down, Su Hui held Jiang Yuyan’s hand and made her stand. Her gesture was as if Jiang Yuyan’s pleading and crying really affected her, but the next moment something shocking was about to come out.

Wiping Jiang Yuyan’s tears, Su Hui spoke, “There is one way that you don’t have to leave this home and you can be with Lu Lijun always.”

Hearing it, everyone looked at Su Hui curiously while elder Lu closed his eyes as if he knew what would come next and felt its pain even before Su Hui said it.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Su Hui, her eyes filled with hope, and Su Hui replied, “Marry my son, Lu Feng.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan stepped back in a shock, looking at the woman in front of her in disbelief.

It shocked others, but elder Lu was still calm as if he was already expecting it to happen. He opened his eyes, which never stopped shedding tears, but he didn’t look at Jiang

Yuyan. He was sitting helplessly, leaving everything on Jiang Yuyan.

Just then everyone heard a loud and angry voice that shook the entire room.

“Mother!”

---

Lu Feng came back to the home where Lu Bao and Lu Lian were standing outside of the main house, trying no know what was happening inside, their faces looked worried and hearts hurt for Jiang Yuyan.

“What are you both doing here?” Lu Feng asked. He looked totally messed up.

His hair was messy, and his shirt wrinkled. After leaving home, he couldn't think of what to do and went somewhere far away and didn't even eat anything. He was just worried about Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun, and his own mother was making it difficult for him but never ever he thought that when he would be back, he will witness something even painful.

Seeing Lu Feng, both girls left out a sigh of relief and Lu Lian said, “They are sending Yuyan away. Brother, please do som.....”

Before Lu Lian could finish her sentence, Lu Feng dashed inside and heard the voices. That was Jiang Yuyan who was pleading to Su Hui, but before he could stop his mother, the shocking and hurting words had already made its way out.

Everyone looked at Lu Feng, who shouted loudly and stepped towards his mother.

“Mother, Yuyan is not going anywhere. She will stay in this family the way she wants and this is my last warning to you. Don't trouble her.”

His expressions were furious and his voice cold and threatening but it didn't affect his mother and she said, “This is the best thing for this family as Yuyan will always stay with us. Do you want her to be like this, always sad and crying?”



“It’s her decision what she wants to do in her life and not others,” Lu Feng countered.

“Then she has to leave this family as I don’t want one widow to be in our home when we have one young man in the family. Outsiders can use it to throw mud on us just like in those pictures.”

“She is not going anywhere,” Lu Feng declared, gritting his teeth, ignoring his mother’s words.

Others didn’t know how to react to this stubborn woman in front of them and let Lu Feng handle it. Jiang Yuyan was standing silent, still in a shock while her mother patted her back, being ready to take her daughter with her and not willing to let her go through such humiliation.

Su Hui was still calm. “Elder’s has already decided it and you have no say in it, Lu Feng.”

Lu Feng turned to his grandpa and said, “Grandpa, take your decision back.”

“Let her go, Lu Feng, this is the best thing we can do for her. Say no more now.” elder Lu instructed and closed his eyes back to rest his head on the headboard of the bed.

Lu Feng knew he won’t be able to change elder Lu’s decision and felt helpless. Mo Ruolan put her hand around Jiang Yuyan who looked like in daze and was ready to move however others wanted her to.

“Let’s go,” Mo Ruolan instructed, but before she could move even one step, Lu Feng stood in front of Jiang Yuyan.

“Yuyan, you don’t have to listen to these people. It’s your home and no one can force you to leave. Let them say what they want. Just don’t leave,” said Lu Feng, being desperate to stop her from leaving.

“Let us go, Lu Feng,” Mo Ruolan instructed but ignoring it, Lu Feng continued, “I will make sure that no one will ask you to leave. Just hold on for some time. Trust me.”

As Lu Feng was not listening, Mo Ruolan changed her path and turned to leave, but Lu Feng was stubborn. He held

Yuyan's hand and again stood up in front of her.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan was not listening to him, Lu Feng asked, "What can I do to make you trust me, Yuyan? Give me some time and I..."

"Marry me."

## 634 Her Final Decision..

“Marry me.”

Everyone heard these shocking words from Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Feng couldn't believe Jiang Yuyan herself said it and stood there speechless, looking at her in a shock.

It shocked others too, but Su Hui and Qin Xiu while elder Lu didn't even look at Jiang Yuyan as if he was expecting it to happen. He was sitting calmly, leaving the things at destiny.

“Yuyan!” Ning Jiahui and Mo Ruolan exclaimed together but before they could say anything, Jiang Yuyan finally moved her sight up to look at shocked Lu Feng and said again, “Marry me, Lu Feng.”

Not replying to her, Lu Feng turned to look at his mother, “Are you happy now, mother?”

Lu Feng's sarcastic words startled Su Hui, as she thought her son would be happy to see the girl he liked is ready to marry him, but from his reaction, it looked the otherwise.

“Lu Feng, it's....”

“Finally, you were successful in cornering her and made her say it. You left no option for her. Can you even imagine how painful it is for her,” Lu Feng asked interrupting his mother, his eyes teary and his voice heavy.

“I didn't force her, Lu Feng....”

“You did mother and see, this is the result.” Pausing for a moment, Lu Feng continued looking at his mother with a site filled with hate, “I will not marry her. Did you hear me, mother? I will not and I will see who dares to force her to leave this house.” Lu Feng declared.

“I will, Lu Feng because I can't let the widow be in our house,” Su Hui was still stubborn.

“Then you can forget you have two sons,” he said as there was no other way to deal with his mother.

“Lu Feng, you....”

Ignoring his mother, Lu Feng turned to Jiang Yuyan. “You don’t have to do this Yuyan. I will make everything right, just hang on for some time.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t react to his assuring words and said, “Please marry me, I am begging you.”

Seeing her so pressured to do the things against her will, Lu Feng felt his heart sunk somewhere deep in the ocean. Not having a word to say as he didn’t want to say no to her pleading, Lu Feng turned to leave just to hear his mother.

“Lu Feng, tomorrow morning be at the temple. The wedding would be then and there.”

“You can force her, but not me, mother.” Saying, Lu Feng left, but there was no change in Su Hui.

Turning to look at Jiang Yuyan, Su Hui asked, “Yuyan, are you sure about what you just said?”

Before Jiang Yuyan could answer, her mother spoke, “She is not in the right state of mind. She will not....”

“I am ready to marry Lu Feng,” Jiang Yuyan spoke, her sight fixed on the floor, tears making their way out.

“Yuyan, don’t be in a hurry. We can think about it later,” Ning Jiahui suggested.

Ning Jiahui had no problem with Jiang Yuyan marrying Lu Feng as she knew Lu Feng was a nice person and someone closer to her late son and Yuyan, but for her, this was not the right time to let it happen. Moreover, she didn’t want Jiang Yuyan to take a decision under any pressure.

“What’s there to think about later, elder sister. It would be better to get it done sooner, for her and for our family’s sake,” said Su Hui.

Seeing the things won’t change as Jiang Yuyan herself was ready for the wedding, Mo Ruolan suggested, “We can get it

done when we are in the city as we have to register the marriage there. Just going to the temple is not enough to call it a wedding. It won't be legit."

Mo Ruolan wanted to buy some time, but Su Hui was adamant about her decision.

"What is the problem with the wedding in the temple? In the old times when there was no registry process, people married in the temples and blessings from the lord buddha and master in the temple were enough. Our ancestors got married like this and we all are here," said Su Hui.

"Su Hui, now the time has changed. To make a marriage legit, we need to register it first," said Ning Jiahui.

"But we still believe in old costumes, elder sister. Look at father and mother, they got married in the temple. Are you saying their marriage is not legit?" Su Hui asked, and her words left others speechless.

"Father-mother, are you not going to say anything?" asked, Ning Jiahui, hoping that elders will say something, but she got disappointment in return.

"Let her go back with her mother. That's my final decision," said elder Lu.

Grandma, who was not happy with elder Lu's decision before about sending Jiang Yuyan with her mother, now understood why her husband was so determined to send her away from the family and agreed with him.

"I will be in the temple in the morning," saying Jiang Yuyan left before she could have to give up in front of elders.

Her words were the final decree and no one had a say in it. Mo Ruolan knew, if her daughter had decided to do it, no one can change her decision so she didn't try to convince her and neither did Ning Jiahui.

Jiang Yuyan went back to her room and closed the door. Leaning at the door with her forehead resting on it, Jiang Yuyan continued crying. She forgot that someone was in the room who was awake and looking at her to know why she was crying.

Getting out of the bed, Lu Lijun went to her and shook her hand. Wiping her tears, Jiang Yuyan looked at him and Lu Lijun took her to the bed by holding her hand. He didn't ask her what happened and signaled her to sit on the bed.

As Jiang Yuyan sat at the edge of the bed, he fetched a glass of water for her. Accepting, Jiang Yuyan had it while still sobbing and tears rolling down her cheeks. Lu Lijun took the glass from her and getting closer, he hugged her.

## 635 He Is The Groom...

Lu Lijun didn't know what was wrong with Jiang Yuyan neither he asked what happened but he comforted her just the way she did it for him till now, hugging and caressing.

Jiang Yuyan continued crying in the little guy's embrace, who was trying his best to calm her down. For Jiang Yuyan, it was a relief that Lu Lijun didn't know what happened and he didn't even ask. He became her shelter to let her cry as much as she wanted without questioning or judging her.

Once Jiang Yuyan stopped crying, she didn't talk but preferred to sit quietly, and Lu Lijun didn't disturb her. She spent her day till the evening locked inside her room while Lu Lijun accompanied her with his silence.

Ning Jiahui and Mo Ruolan were sitting together thinking how to stop it, but both couldn't find the way. Jiang Yang and Jiang Peizhi were not there, and even if they were present there, it was difficult to change Jiang Yuyan's decision.

Both finally decided to go to Su Hui to ask her to stop it. When both ladies reached Su Hui's room, they saw few servants coming out from inside and when they saw what was inside the room; they felt speechless.

Su Hui noticed them. "Elder sister, sister Ruolan, it's good that you are here. This is all for tomorrow's wedding."

Few boxes were placed on the table in the room which had the things required for the wedding. A Traditional Chinese wedding dress, jewelry and a few more things for the bride.

"Su Hui, we are here to ask you to stop all this," said Ning Jiahui.

While going through the things of the wedding, Su Hui replied, "I am afraid that I will disappoint, elder sister."

"Su Hui, this is not good...." As Ning Jiahui said but Su Hui interrupted her, "I always thought to have a grand wedding for my son, but it's fine as long it's good for our family."

Pulling out a red wedding dress from the box, Su Hui showed it to Mo Ruolan. Ignoring the displeased faces of the two women standing there, Su Hui said, "This will look good on Yuyan and see this for the groom."

Without looking at anything, Mo Ruolan stepped out of the room, not willing to talk a single word to this stubborn woman and Ning Jiahui followed her too.

Once they left, Su Hui's expression changed to a serious one and she mumbled, "I am sorry, elder sister, but I am doing it for my son and I hope you will understand it one day."

Su Hui knew why these two came to her, so she didn't give them any chance to say something that will change her mind.

In the evening, there was a knock on the door of Jiang Yuyan's room. As she opened it, she saw Su Hui and Qin Xiu were standing at the door with two servants standing behind them, carrying a few boxes. Jiang Yuyan understood what it was and moved to the side so that servant could enter the room to keep the things inside the room.

Su Hui and Qin Xiu entered the room, too. Lu Lijun ignored them and continued looking in the laptop as Jiang Yuyan asked him to play some games to change his mood and pass the time.

Opening the boxes to show what was inside, Su Hui instructed, "This is your wedding dress that you have to wear and this red robe is for Lu Feng. You have to bring it to the temple as it meant to be from the bride's side as a gesture of accepting a man as her husband. You have put it on him by yourself. This jewelry is for you. Make sure to wear it all."

Jiang Yuyan was standing silently, not reacting much to anything. Taking her silence as her approval, Su Hui left and Qin Xiu followed her mother-in-law.

On the way back to the room, Qin Xiu said, "Mother, Lu Feng is not back home yet. Do you think he will really come to the wedding?"

"He will as he cares for her and can't keep her waiting for him," Su Hui replied.

"Hmm! I hope so."



That night, everyone went to sleep not being aware of what the next day would bring for them, might be something that no one would ever dare to think about it in their dreams even.

---

The next day morning...

All the family members were in the living room, ready to leave for the temple. Elder Lu didn't want to attend this wedding but grandma Zhao Shuang insisted on him saying they should give their blessing to the couple even though they were unhappy with the wedding.

"Mother, Lu Feng is not back home since yesterday and I don't think he will be back." Qin Xiu was worried.

"I sent him messages to be there till the time and he will be there. Not for us, but for his bride." As Su Hui said it, but no one wanted to hear her saying it, the word- bride.

"I think we should leave as Lu Feng might come there directly," Su Hui instructed and unwillingly others got ready to leave.

"Qin Xiu, bring Yuyan out. Tell her we are getting late," Su Hui instructed, being ready to go out.

Nodding Qin Xiu left. In a while she came back and looked panicked, "Mother, Yuyan is not in her room."

"She must be somewhere. Just check properly."

"No one is in her room. Lu Lijun is not there too, and I searched everywhere."

Before Su Hui could say anything, everyone's eyes caught a sight that shocked them. They couldn't think, whether it was a reality or just a play to please the kid.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun entered the living room, Jiang Yuyan wearing a red dress meant for the bride while Lu Lijun was wearing a red robe meant for the groom. Both looked like a bride and groom, but it was not convincing as Lu Lijun was a kid.

They thought Lu Lijun must wear it for the fun, but still, it was not a good sign and not a good sight to see.

Su Hui went to Lu Lijun and said softly, “Dear, this robe does not mean for you, this is for the groom. Take it out so we all can hurry to the wedding.”

“He is the groom and the wedding have been finished, already.”

=====

Tonight is the reset for votes and it will start from zero..  
continue voting to maintain our rank and to get such mass  
release again and again...

## 636 Bride And The Groom...

“He is the groom and the wedding has been finished, already.”

These words from Yuyan shocked everyone to their bones. Their eyes not leaving a sight in front where Yuyan was standing wearing a red bridal dress and Lu Lijun was wearing a red robe meant for the groom.

The bride, wearing a red Traditional Chinese wedding dress, long up to her feet, a belt circled around the waist to tie in a knot at the backside, long sleeves ended up to half of her palm, her hair tied in a bun with hair jewelry tucked in them. A tinge of light makeup and a red shade on her lips. The dress perfectly fitted to her slim body and everything together made her look the prettiest Chinese bride.

The groom, wearing a robe, having a fine embroidery of golden color threads on it which was bigger in size to Lu Lijun's short stature. The bottom part of the robe brushed the floor as he walked and circled around his feet as he stood up, the long sleeves hid his hands completely as they were too long for his short arms. That loose robe was secured tightly around him with the belt of the robe that was being tied at the backside.

“W-What? What did you just say?” Su Hui asked in disbelief and others continued sitting in their seats in a shock.

“You heard it right, aunt Su Hui,” said Jiang Yuyan confidently.

“You married to Lu Lijun?” Su Hui asked again.

“Yes,” Jiang Yuyan replied, looking into Su Hui's eyes.

Mo Ruolan stepped towards her daughter and exclaimed, “Yuyan, this is not the time when you joke around.”

“It's the truth, mother. I married Lu Lijun and we are now husband and wife,” Jiang Yuyan declared.

Lu Lijun was standing silently there, not minding what others were saying, but every word being said there was getting imprinted on his mind.

Ning Jiahui and elders were still in shock and didn't know what to say or how to react.

"How can you marry a kid? If you had done it, it's not legit?" said Qin Xiu to side with her mother-in-law.

Jiang Yuyan left out a chuckle. "Legit, huh? When a man can marry a girl of his granddaughter's age, why can't I marry a boy who is just a few years younger than me?"

"He is not even an adult. Law won't accept this wedding, Yuyan," Su Hui said, being furious about it.

Su Hui could see there was a change in Jiang Yuyan and she was not the one they all say a previous day, week and helpless and crying one. 'What had happen suddenly to give her courage?' thought Su Hui.

"Are we really talking about the law? I thought here we follow the things done by our ancestors." A sarcastic reply came from Jiang Yuyan.

"That was the different thing and this one is different. Marriage with the kid is simply not acceptable," Su Hui insisted, but it didn't affect Jiang Yuyan a bit.

"When the lord buddha and the master in the temple gave me permission and their blessings, I think I don't need anyone's approval and not even the permission of law."

"How can you....."

"Aunt Su Hui, haven't you said the weddings in the temple, permitted by the lord and the master are legit?" Jiang Yuyan interpreted Su Hui.

Jiang Yuyan's lips carried a smirk and her eyes evil. She looked totally different from the innocent Jiang Yuyan. Her mother noticed it and thought there was no way she could stop her daughter.

Jiang Yuyan was using Su Hui's words on her that made Su Hui speechless.

“Still no one will accept this wedding, Yuyan,” saying Su Hui looked at the elders and other family members but no one gave Su Hui a look of support as all were shocked and disappointed with the situation.

“Father-mother, tell her this is not acceptable,” Su Hui pleaded but there was no reaction from elders.

“Help me get back to the room.” Saying to his wife, elder Lu got up from his chair and grandma Zhao Shuang helped him. Both left the living room together.

It made Su Hui frustrated and she looked at Ning Jiahui, “Elder sister, won’t you say anything to her. Say something, he is your son who doesn’t even know the meaning of marriage.”

Ning Jiahui, who was sitting in the chair helplessly while looking at the floor with her teary eyes, looked at Su Hui, “This is all your fault, Su Hui. You forced her to do this.”

“Elder sister, I was thinking about her well being.....”

“Not a word more, Su Hui or I might do something to you that we will regret for our lives.” Ning Jiahui warned, her expressions furious that scared Su Hui.

This calm-looking woman, Ning Jiahui who always tolerated everything Su Hui did, her misbehaving attitude, her hurting words and what not just to maintain peace in the family but this time Ning Jiahui looked furious and it scared Su Hui.

Not saying anything, Ning Jiahui left the room too and Su Hui could just look at her.

Su Hui moved to Mo Ruolan, “Aren’t you going to say anything to your daughter, sister Ruolan?” Sui Hui asked, hoping that at least Mo Ruolan being a mother will stop her daughter.

“I couldn’t say anything when you forced my daughter to do a thing against her will so what do you expect me to say now?” Mo Ruolan countered.

“Tell her it’s not acceptable,” Su Hui replied.

“When she was crying her heart out and begged you to not send her away, you took its advantage. As a mother, I failed to

help her and now how do you expect me to say anything?"

Mo Ruolan looked hurt and emotional. What happened was not acceptable for her too, but there was nothing she could do but to show her anger to Su Hui.

"But...."

"Don't forget you are the one to push my daughter to this point, so it's only your fault." Saying Mo Ruolan left too.

=====

Today is the reset for votes so don't forget to vote.. let's maintain our rank... XOXO

## 637 The Game Is Over...

Furious Su Hui looked at Jiang Yuyan who was calm and there was not a tinge of regret in her eyes, instead, she looked determined about what she did.

“This marriage is not acceptable Yuyan,” declared Su Hui.

“I don’t care what you think, aunt Su Hui. You can go to the temple and ask the master if it is acceptable or not.” Saying, Jiang Yuyan pulled out a small paper scroll from the pocket in her sleeves and offered it to Su Hui. “Have a look. This is the paper from the temple if this is what you think approved the weddings for our ancestors.”

Su Hui recognized the red color paper scroll, and it confirmed to her that Jiang Yuyan really went to the temple and went through the procedure of the wedding.

Su Hui took that paper scroll from Jiang Yuyan and opened it just to make it sure again, but it broke the last thread of hope in Su Hui’s mind. This cleared all of Su Hui’s doubt as she thought Jiang Yuyan was putting on the show just to avoid getting married to Lu Feng.

That red color paper meant to have an approval of the wedding and the confirmation of the man and a woman being a husband and a wife which is personally written by the master in the temple and no one could deny the wedding happened.

Su Hui looked devastated. “You really...” Mumbling, Su Hui tightened her grip on the red paper as if she will tear it.

“Don’t you dare to tear that paper, aunt Su Hui, as you know the punishment of denying the wedding when the great master himself approved it,” warned Jiang Yuyan and took that paper back from Su Hui. Folding the paper back in the roll, Jiang Yuyan kept it back.

Su Hui couldn’t do anything but to curse the situation. She looked utterly disappointed, devastated and broke. Moreover,

Jiang Yuyan used all of Su Hui's tricks against her and made turned the table in her favor.

Seeing Su Hui, who looked as if she lost everything, Jiang Yuyan smirked and looked at Lu Lijun with a smile who was just observing what was going on and said, "Let's go, Lu Lijun."

Lu Lijun nodded and followed Jiang Yuyan, his steps slow as the long robe was getting into his feet.

Two girls from the Lu Family, who were watching all this with a shock, they too didn't know what and how everything happened. Not knowing what to think about it, both girls left and only Su Hui and Qin Xiu left behind.

"This girl, what has she done?" Su Hui was frustrated as all her dreams about her son shattered into pieces.

"Calm down, mother. There should be a way. Do you really think she did it? I mean Lu Lijun is a kid." Qin Xiu asked, consoling her mother-in-law, but they both knew there was no way out as others in the family said nothing and the master in the temple whose words were equal to that from a god himself approved it.

"She did it for real. Everything can be a lie, but that paper from the temple is the truth," replied Su Hui as the tears rolled down from her eyes in the disappointment she got.

When Jiang Yuyan entered the room with Lu Lijun, she closed the door and turned to him.

"Let me help you take out the robe." Saying Jiang, Yuyan stood up in front of Lu Lijun and untied the strap of that oversized robe around his waist. Finally, Lu Lijun felt relieved as that heavy robe was finally taken off and he could be in his normal clothes, T-shirt and pants.

With something going on in her mind, Jiang Yuyan made him sit on one chair. Kneeling in front of him, she said, "Lu Lijun, do you remember what I said?"

Lu Lijun gave her a puzzled look to know what she was talking about, so Jiang Yuyan continued. "I told you we will play one game, remember?"



Lu Lijun nodded and Jiang Yuyan continued, “What we did since the morning, I mean, going to the temple and praying to the god in these clothes, it’s just a part of the game and the game is over now. You can forget about it all, okay?”

Lu Lijun nodded again and Jiang Yuyan gave out a sigh of relief. “You must be hungry as you haven’t eaten anything.”  
Lu Lijun nodded again. Jiang Yuyan asked the servant to bring breakfast to their room.

---

Mo Ruolan went to Ning Jiahui who was sitting on the bed, crying over the things. Mo Ruolan didn’t know what to say, whether she should blame her daughter for taking such a decision or blame others for forcing her daughter to do this.

Mo Ruolan stood near the bed with her head down apologetically and said, “Sister, Jiahui, I apologize for Yuyan’s actions.....”

“You need not apologize as we all are at fault,” Ning Jiahui interrupted her and Mo Ruolan agreed to it.

Wiping her tears, Ning Jiahui continued, “I am worried about what will happen next. Lu Lijun is just a kid and how it will affect him. He doesn’t even know what he had been put into.”

Understanding Ning Jiahui’s worry, Mo Ruolan sat on the bed to console her, “Though we believe in old traditions, according to the law this marriage is not valid as Lu Lijun is a minor and it carries no value. Nowadays, to consider the marriage is legit we need permission from the law so I think it can be solved.”

Mo Ruolan’s words were convincing for Ning Jiahui, but as a mother Ning Jiahui was worried about her son knowing how he was and mumbled, “I hope he will forget it as a dream till he grows up.”

“He will. Lu Lijun is just a kid and it won’t take him time to forget it as the time will pass by,” Mo Ruolan assured.

“I hope so too as I know how Lu Lijun is and he won’t forget it easily. I am worried, it might create trouble for Yuyan once he will understand the things and it will again disturb our family,” said Ning Jiahui.

=====

Seems like whenever I give mass release, it results in rank going down and it seems like you guys don't like the mass release. The last date of this month that is the 30th April, would be the mass release. It's up to you all whether you want it or not and want me to add the chapters in the privileged subscription.

## 638 Trust On Her...

“Leave it to the future, sister Jiahui. Yuyan had taken this step so she must have thought about everything. Somewhere my heart trusts my daughter,” said Mo Ruolan.

Nodding, Ning Jiahui spoke, “I trust her too and I can’t blame her for anything as she had been left with no choice and we all know how much she loves Lu Qiang. I feel sorry for her. When these were the moments when she should have been happy like any other married woman, she has to go through difficulties again and again.”

It was a relief for Mo Ruolan that Ning Jiahui didn’t hate Jiang Yuyan after what she did and gave out a sigh of relief. Now the only thing left was how to solve this messed up situation.

—

In the elder’s room...

“Are you not going to say anything,” Grandma asked.

“What is there to say when it’s too late to change the things,” spoke elder Lu, who was sitting in the chair.

“Do you approve the wedding?” Grandma asked.

“It’s not about me approving anything. It’s about what and why Yuyan did it and my heart wants to trust her decision,” elder Lu said.

Agreeing, grandma said, “I am thinking the same. What had happened suddenly that she did it? And the way she looked today was totally different from how she looked yesterday.”

“Hmm!” Elder Lu agreed.

Both the elders were in deep thoughts and decided to wait to get the answers.

—

The whole day passed by, no one talked to anyone and the entire house was dead silent. Mo Ruolan received the calls

from her husband and the son, but she couldn't dare to tell them what had just happened.

In the evening, Lu Feng came back. As he entered the gate of the courtyard, he saw Lu Lian was sitting alone outside of the side house in one corner on the steps where no one could see her easily. Though it was the evening, the dim light from the lamp above couldn't hide what she was doing.

Lu Feng observed her and noticed she was crying. He went to her and asked straightaway while sitting beside her on the steps, "What happened?"

Lu Lian didn't realize when Lu Feng came and it startled her. Wiping her tears, she shook her head as saying- nothing.

"If you won't tell me then how am I going to help my sweet sister?" Lu Feng insisted.

Lu Lian couldn't stop her tears and questioned, "Why all this is happening in our family? How happy we were!"

"I know but we have to be strong now. Did something happen when I was not around?" Lu Feng asked as he could sense it from the way Lu Lian was crying.

"Hmm! Where were you, brother? If you were here, it wouldn't have happened," asked Lu Lian.

Lu Feng was not home since the previous day when he left it after arguing with his mother, but he didn't expect something would happen in his absence.

Looking at his sister with worried expressions, Lu Feng asked, "What happened?"

Lu Feng felt his heart suddenly pounding faster to think what sad news waiting for him now as these past few days were nothing but the disastrous ones and full of sad news. He left home in protest to his mother and thought his absence might change the situation as Yuyan won't have to marry him, but he never thought something shocking would be there waiting for him.

"Yuyan got married," Lu Lian replied, and it shocked Lu Feng to his bones and he felt like the floor below his feet slipped

away.

“What?” he exclaimed loudly. Holding Lu Lian by her shoulders tightly, he asked, “H- How and with whom? Tell me fast,” he looked anxious and worried.

“Lu Lijun!”

The next reply from her shocked him even more.

“What?” he asked in disbelief.

“Yes,” she confirmed.

Lu Feng let go of Lu Lian and asked, as he couldn't believe it, “How can this be? He is a kid. This is not possible and allowed even.”

Lu Lian explained to him everything that she witnessed in the morning.

Inhaling deeply to calm himself down and holding his head, his fingers buried in hair, he asked, “Where is she?”

“In her room,” Lu Lian replied.

Getting up from the stairs, Lu Feng straightaway went to Jiang Yuyan's room and Lu Lian followed him, feeling worried.

When Lu Feng reached Jiang Yuyan's room, he waited for a few moments to calm down and knocked on the door of the room. Though he looked calm from outside, there was a storm inside his mind. Lu Lian stopped just behind him, a few steps away.

Jiang Yuyan opened the door, she saw Lu Feng standing there and her sight followed Lu Lian who was standing behind him. Jiang Yuyan understood why Lu Feng was there, but it didn't worry her.

Lu Feng thought when he will see Jiang Yuyan, she would look devastated and broke, but it was totally the opposite. She was calm as if nothing had happened.

“Lu Lian, stay with Lu Lijun till I come back,” Jiang Yuyan instructed before Lu Feng could ask her anything and he understood she wanted to talk alone.

Lu Lian nodded and followed Jiang Yuyan inside the room. Picking up her cellphone, Jiang Yuyan went to Lu Lijun who was playing games on the laptop.

“Lu Lijun. I will be back in sometime. Be good and be with Lu Lian,” Jiang Yuyan instructed and Lu Lijun nodded as usual, not asking her where she was going or anything.

Getting out of the room, Jiang Yuyan closed the door and asked, “Can we go somewhere away from here?”

The moment Lu Feng saw her, he wanted to bombard her with so many questions but he couldn't do it but to follow her leads.

Nodding, Lu Feng took Jiang Yuyan to the one side of the huge courtyard on the other side of the garden, which was deserted and away from the main and the side houses.

## 639 True Face...

“Here!” said Lu Feng as he stopped.

“Hmm! Ask that you want to ask me,” Jiang Yuyan instructed, her expressions cold and her eyes emotionless.

Lu Feng, who was standing ahead, facing his back to her, turned around and asked looking into her eyes, “Why did you do it?” He tried hard to suppress how angry he was.

“What?” Jiang Yuyan asked nonchalantly as if she didn’t get what he asked and it angered Lu Feng seeing her acting like this and he exclaimed.

“When I assured you that you don’t have to marry anyone and I will find a way and just give me some time, when I said to my mother that I won’t marry you even if she forced me and even stayed away from home since yesterday so that she can’t force you to marry me, why did you marry Lu Lijun? Didn’t you trust me even a bit?”

He bombarded with all the questions he had in his mind.

“You are right. I don’t trust you and I don’t trust anyone,” Jiang Yuyan replied coldly.

Her straightforward reply startled him but he collected himself and said, “I know I did nothing to help you but I was trying to find a way out, why didn’t you wait. Why couldn’t you trust me at least even once?”

“Do you really want me to tell you?” Jiang Yuyan asked, her voices sarcastic.

“Yes, tell me.”

“The person who betrayed my husband, how can I trust him?” Jiang Yuyan asked and it left Lu Feng puzzled.

“What? Who?” Lu Feng asked.

“You,” she replied, looking straight into his eyes.

“Yuyan! Are you out of your mind?” He was shocked and felt wrongly blamed, not knowing how to react.

“I was but now I am not after seeing your true face.”

These words from her were shocking and hurting for him as he was the one who always sacrificed everything, but now he was getting blamed for betraying the person whom he valued the most.

“True face? What did I do? Lu Qiang was your husband, but he was my brother and most precious person in my life. How can you say that I betrayed him?”

Chuckling, Jiang Yuyan mumbled, “Lies!” She did something on her mobile and showed it to Lu Feng. “Will you still deny what I said?”

Looking at the screen of the mobile, Lu Feng took it from her hands. His eyes left wide open with what he saw, “This....”

“Dare to deny it,” Jiang Yuyan interrupted Lu Feng and he was silent while watching the video till the end.

“I hope it’s enough to get all your answers.”

Saying, Jiang Yuyan turned to leave but halted in her tracks as she faced her back to him.

“The reason I am silent because my husband wanted this family to be one so don’t you ever think that I have a soft corner for you and let it slide. From now on, you are nobody to me and whoever dares to break my husband’s dream, I will crush them. Also, if I find out that you have anything to do with Lu Qiang’s death, I will kill you with my bare hands.”

Warning Jiang Yuyan left, not turning even once to see how Lu Feng was.

Once she left, the video playing in the mobile stopped too and Lu Feng knelt down on the ground, tears rolling down his cheeks. Not a single word could come out from his throat.

Jiang Yuyan went back to her room and asked Lu Lian to go back to her room. Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan who gave him a smile and said, “I will get freshen up.”



No one could guess that the pleasant smile which came out only for Lu Lijun, there was something dark hidden behind it. Jiang Yuyan looked harmless and the most loving and caring person one could see.

Lu Lijun nodded and Jiang Yuyan went to the bathroom after pulling out a set of fresh clothes from the cupboard. Not realizing something fell from the cupboard along with her clothes.

As she left, Lu Lijun stepped out of the bed to pick up the thing that fell on the ground. It was the scroll of the red paper which Jiang Yuyan brought from the temple, but Lu Lijun didn't know what was inside it.

Lu Lijun opened the scroll and read what was inside. It was the declaration of Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan being a husband and wife. Lu Lijun looked at their names, which followed by two words- Lu Lijun husband and Jiang Yuyan wife. He continued looking at the scroll for a while and kept it back in the cupboard after rolling it back the way it was and went back to the bed to continue playing the game on the laptop.

In the night, after having dinner in their rooms and Lu Lijun went to sleep, there was a knock on the door. When Jiang Yuyan opened the door, she saw Lu Lian was standing in front of the door holding Jiang Yuyan's mobile that she left with Lu Feng.

"Elder brother asked me to give your mobile back," said Lu Lian and Jiang Yuyan accepted it quietly.

Just as Jiang Yuyan was about to close the door, Lu Lian spoke again, "Elder brother left suddenly in his car and he didn't look good. Is everything fine?"

"You need not worry about him. Go back to the room and take a rest," Jiang Yuyan commanded coldly that Lu Lian had no other option but to leave after nodding.

Lu Lian found this changed Jiang Yuyan scary and whenever she saw her cold, it was hard for her to face Jiang Yuyan as no one could guess what was going on in her mind.

Once Lu Lian left, Jiang Yuyan went to the other room attached to her bedroom and dialed a number. It was San Zemin's number.

As San Zemin received the call, she asked, "Did you and Lu Qiang already know that there was a mole and he is from the family?"

## 640 Wrong Judgement...

“Mrs. Lu, that...” Jiang Yuyan’s sudden question startled San Zemin.

“Do I need to command you to tell me everything without me asking you?” Jiang Yuyan questioned, her voice was threatening and commanding.

“Mrs. Lu. Once you are back, I have so many things to show you and introduce it to you but it can be only done when you are personally here. Talking on the phone is not enough,” San Zemin explained.

“Hmm!” agreeing Jiang Yuyan asked, “Why didn’t Lu Qiang try to do something about him?”

“For boss, the family was always the first priority and what the person did was not very serious and the boss took over it easily using it against them,” San Zemin replied.

Chuckling Jiang Yuyan spoke, “I am not kind like your previous boss. Whoever tried to betray or harm my husband has to pay the price for it.”

Jiang Yuyan declared and San Zemin could sense how serious and determined his new boss was.

Jiang Yuyan continued, “Though your previous boss ignored it, I will not let it go. Lu Feng will get his share of punishment.”

“Lu Feng?” San Zemin questioned as it surprised him.

“Yes, the mole.”

“Mrs, Lu is being mistaken. Lu Feng had nothing to do with it,” San Zemin countered.

“What?” It was the time for Jiang Yuyan to get surprised. “In that video, it was clear that he was talking to Ming Rusheng.”

“May I know what video Mrs. Lu has seen?” San Zemin asked calmly as he understood there was some kind of

misunderstanding.

“The video in which the man wearing a black sports jacket with a hoodie, talking to Ming Rusheng and I know that jacket belongs to Lu Feng as it’s the only one-piece created and designed,” Jiang Yuyan replied being confident about her judgment.

San Zemin understood which video Jiang Yuyan was talking about and said, “That person was Lu Han, not Lu Feng.”

“What? But...That jacket...”

“That jacket belongs to Lu Feng, but the person in that video is Lu Han. The video Mrs. Lu had watched have only the backside of the person facing the camera, so Mrs. Lu must have thought it was Lu Feng,” San Zemin concluded.

“Are you sure that was elder brother Lu Han?” Jiang Yuyan asked to make it sure.

“Yes,” San Zemin replied.

Jiang Yuyan hung up the call, thinking about what she had done just a while ago with Lu Feng. She was so angry and blinded by the revenge that she didn’t even care to verify the things with San Zemin first and took decisions on her own judgment.

Jiang Yuyan dialed Lu Feng’s number, but it was out of reach. She was not feeling guilty about marrying Lu Lijun as she would have never married Lu Feng even, but she was feeling guilty about accusing Lu Feng of something that he never did.

She felt hurt realizing so many things at the moment that how much Lu Qiang was important for him, what kind of reaction both brothers shared and how much hurt Lu Feng must have felt after losing the most important person in his life. She was regretting it but it was too late to do so as the deed has already done.

“Elder brother, Lu Han,” the name came out as Jiang Yuyan greeted her teeth.

—

Flashback- the night before the wedding.

When Jiang Yuyan came back to her room after agreeing to marry Lu Feng, she was calm as she didn't wish to show it to Lu Lijun that she cried. Late at night when Lu Lijun was in a deep sleep, Jiang Yuyan could not sleep as so many things were going on in her mind.

She didn't want to marry anyone, but she agreed for the sake of Lu Lijun. She looked at the little guy beside her who was sleeping soundly.

Patting his head, she spoke, "I can do anything for your sake. As you were everything for him, you are everything for me too."

Not being able to sleep, Jiang Yuyan went to sit on the chair. It was the moment she was feeling weak mentally and missed Lu Qiang. She couldn't stop herself from opening the laptop and going through the pictures of Lu Qiang and both of them together, all the happy moments they shared.

Tears rolling down her eyes, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "I am sorry, Lu Qiang, but tomorrow I will marry someone as I have no other choice. I hope you will forgive me."

Time passed by as she continued crying. She closed the folder of the pictures but going through the drive, her sight fell on one folder which had no title but the icon showed there was one video file.

Thinking it must be something about Lu Qiang and she will get to see him in the video, Jiang Yuyan opened it and as it played, the expressions on her face changed to the shocked one.

In the video, a man stepped down from his sports bike, his back faced the camera and he was wearing a black sports jacket which had a hoodie. The back of the jacket had one phoenix on it with tiny maple leaves around.

The man stepped forward and one luxurious car stopped in front of him. The next moment one familiar man stepped out of the car and he was Ming Rusheng.

Jiang Yuyan reversed the video to look at the bike and then stopped the video to check the jacket. The sports bike was the

one that belonged to Lu Feng which he hardly used but his love for sports vehicles made him buy it along with his sports car and everyone in the family was aware of his love for it.

The jacket in the video was the one that belonged to Lu Feng too. It was a gift from elder brother Lu Han to Lu Feng. Jiang Yuyan remembered it as once Lu Lijun was talking to Lu Feng and Lu Lijun told him that he liked the jacket a lot. Lu Feng promised him to get the same jacket for him and later explained why it was special.

# 641 A Decision For His Sake...

That jacket was the only one available piece and designed on the order by Lu Feng's elder brother, Lu Han. The phoenix and the maple leaves on the jacket represented Lu Feng's name. Feng means phoenix, or the maple leaves, whichever suits the personality of the person but Lu Han thought these both things suit Lu Feng so he made the design by using both.

Jiang Yuyan was sure that the person in the video was Lu Feng as both things, the sports bike and the jacket were proof of it. She forwarded the video to where she had stopped before.

Ming Rusheng stepped out of the car and stepped towards the man in the black jacket. He was wearing a black suit

As they stood facing each other, Ming Rusheng spoke, "Good to see that finally, you agreed to side with me. Let's work together to take that Lu Qiang out of our way."

The man in the black jacket said nothing, but took out one file from the jacket and handed it over to Ming Rusheng.

Accepting the file and going through it, Ming Rushen spoke, "I asked you to meet me in person instead of sending me it by email because I wanted to meet my friend personally."

The man in the black jacket didn't react and Ming Rushen closed the file, "Perfect," and looked at the man in the jacket in front, "Rest assured, I won't tell your secret to anyone about all the money you have. Just help me like this to get rid of Lu Qiang and I will help you get on his chair."

Still, there was no reaction from the man and he turned towards his bike just to leave the place while Ming Rusheng mumbled, "Lu Qiang, soon you would be nobody and Yuyan would be mine."

As much as Jiang Yuyan was shocked to think about how Lu Feng betrayed Lu Qiang, she was shocked to see what Ming

Rusheng did and said. Closing the video, she went through its details to know when the video was shot and it was the date from a month before the accident.

Jiang Yuyan remembered Lu Qiang and she was talking about Ming Rusheng and she asked Lu Qiang if Ming Rusheng was troubling Lu corporation because of her, but Lu Qiang denied the possibility. She could see Lu Qiang was aware of everything going around, the person betraying him and the person who wanted to get him down to covet his woman.

Never ever she thought about it and Lu Qiang was keeping all these things to himself. Not a single moment was there when Lu Qiang behaved differently with anyone and always maintained his rationality.

More than Ming Rusheng, Jiang Yuyan was angry at Lu Feng. Lu Qiang always treated him as his own and he was ready to give everything to Lu Feng if he had asked for it just once, but Lu Feng decided to betray him.

At this moment few things became clear to her why Su Hui did all this drama and finally forced her to agree to marry Lu Feng.

‘So it was the show put on by the mother and son to get Lu Qiang’s place and the power in the company as, after his death, everything belongs to me,’ she thought.

Jiang Yuyan knew how hard Lu Qiang worked and how much he wanted Lu Lijun to take his place. “This all belongs to Lu Lijun only and I won’t allow anyone to covet it then whatever it takes for me to make it happen.”

It worried her, if she left the Lu Mansion, what will happen with Lu Lijun and what kind of games these people might play to covet everything that belongs to Lu Lijun. Lu Qiang was gone and her father-in-law was in a comatose condition, Ning Jiahui was already broken and Lu Lian was so young then who will protect Lu Lijun from these cunning people. A worry painted on her face. ‘I can’t leave these three alone. I need to be in Lu Mansion,’ she thought.



“Aunt Su Hui and Lu Feng, just wait and watch. I will give you all the humiliation and the worst punishment of your life.” The cold words left her mouth and she thought about what to do.

“Ming Rusheng, if you all had something to do with my husband’s death, I will show you what it is to live in hell.”

Jiang Yuyan went back to the bed thinking Lu Lijun might wake up seeing she was not beside her. She lay beside him and continued looking at the ceiling.

The thoughts were running in her mind about what to do to stay in the Lu Mansion and how to stop others from bothering her from getting married. She didn’t want to marry anyone but wanted to stay in the Lu Mansion for the sake of Lu Lijun and her revenge.

As Jiang Yuyan thought something she looked at Lu Lijun. He was the only one who was harmless and would never stop her from doing what she wanted and she thought to take him as her support and that was to marry him.

She knew it was wrong for her to do it as Lu Lijun was a kid, but there was no other way. In fact, she thought it was the good thing that Lu Lijun was a kid and even if she marries him, that marriage would be illegal. Lu Lijun would never understand what happened and he will forget it soon while she just needed something to shut a few annoying mouths around her.

Jiang Yuyan woke up at dawn just to get ready and later she woke Lu Lijun up. Lu Lijun was not a lazy kid who kept rolling in the bed as the kids of his age, even after the sleep was over. Getting up, he sat on the bed and just then Jiang Yuyan sat in front of him.

## 642 Married Couple...

Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan questioningly, as usual, not saying a word, but his sight was enough for Jiang Yuyan to understand what he meant.

“Lu Lijun, I need your help.” As Jiang Yuyan said it, Lu Lijun continued looking at her to know further and Jiang Yuyan continued.

“We will play a game early in the morning but this is the real game and not the one on the laptop. Got it?” Jiang Yuyan asked, looking into his eyes and waiting to get any reaction from him.

Staring at Jiang Yuyan for a while, Lu Lijun nodded, even though he didn't know what Jiang Yuyan meant. He was an obedient child who was always ready to do what Jiang Yuyan asked him to do without asking a question.

“Get up and get ready, we have to go somewhere,” Jiang Yuyan instructed and Lu Lijun agreed.

When Lu Lijun went to get freshen up and to get ready, Jiang Yuyan went out to go to the servant's rooms. One servant woke up seeing her. She was the woman who was older than all the other servants and looked like she was in her fifties.

“Get one driver for me,” Jiang Yuyan ordered.

The servant looked around to see it was still dark out and asked, “Young mistress, it's still so early. Is there any problem?”

“Just do as I said,” Jiang Yuyan said coldly that the servant didn't dare to ask anything further and left to wake up the driver.

Jiang Yuyan instructed the driver to be ready with the car in just ten minutes and asked the lady servant to not inform anyone about her leaving the home early morning. Servant nodded.

The driver was waiting for Jiang Yuyan and when he saw her, his eyes left wide open in a shock. Jiang Yuyan was wearing Qipao- A traditional Chinese bride's dress and the jewelry. She was carrying one medium-size red color box in her hand.

Lu Lijun was walking along with her, he was wearing his usual clothes, a T-shirt and jeans pants.

When Jiang Yuyan reached the car, the driver heard her saying, "Drive to the temple."

The driver snapped out of the daze, "Y-Yes, young mistress."

The driver had so many questions in his mind but he didn't dare to ask seeing how cold and silent Jiang Yuyan looked.

When they reached the temple, Yuyan took Lu Lijun inside while the driver stayed back. The monks were praying early in the morning and when they were done, one of the monks came to her.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan in a bride's dress, the monk understood why she was there and led her way inside where the master of the temple was. The master was sitting near the huge statue of lord buddha. He recognized the woman and a boy standing in front of him and he welcomed them with a pleasant smile as if he already knew why they were there.

The monk who was standing beside Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun asked, "Are you here for the wedding?"

Looking at him, Yuyan nodded. "Hmm!"

As there was no one adult with Jiang Yuyan, the monk asked, "When will the groom arrive here?"

Looking at Lu Lijun, Jiang Yuyan replied, "He is the groom."

It shocked the monk and he looked at Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun in disbelief and then moved his sight to look at the master who had the same pleasant expressions on his face even after hearing what Jiang Yuyan said.

"Master, this...."

"Prepare for the wedding," the master instructed as he interrupted the monk.

It surprised Jiang Yuyan that the master asked nothing and permitted the wedding when she thought she had to go through the long question-answer session before the wedding.

The monks arranged the altar table for the wedding ceremony, which had memorial tablets for the two lords- the lord of heaven and the lord of the earth to whom the couple had to bow first.

The monk instructed Yuyan as he looked at Lu Lijun, “Put the groom’s robe on him.”

Taking out the long red silk robe from the red box in her hands, Jiang Yuyan put the robe on Lu Lijun, who said nothing and let her do it.

The robe was oversized, but Jiang Yuyan secured it tightly with a belt around his waist and folded the sleeves a little so that his hands would be visible.

Once everything was set the master asked the groom and the bride to bow to the lords of heaven and the earth three times.

Jiang Yuyan held Lu Lijun’s hand and stepped forward towards the altar table which was placed in front of a huge statue of lord buddha and the master was sitting at the one side.

As Jiang Yuyan kneeled down in front of the altar table, she asked Lu Lijun to do so too. Kneeling down, both bowed to the lords three times and as there were no family members, later they bowed to the Lord Buddha and the master.

The wedding was finished as the master gave them the blessing and later wrote the wedding approval on the red paper which was the proof of Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun being a husband and the wife.

Jiang Yuyan could have just faked the wedding without coming to the temple, but what she needed was the paper of wedding approval written by the master which had a stamp from the temple. Being familiar with the traditions in the village, she was aware of all these things and just for that she had to go through all the rituals.

Bowing to the master, Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun left the temple. The driver was waiting for them to come back and when he saw Lu Lijun in the groom's robe; he got another shock of his life.

“Young mistress this...”

Jiang Yuyan gave him a cold look and instructed, “Start the car.”

“Y-Yes,” Saying, the driver first opened the door of the back passenger seats for them to sit and immediately got back to his place- the driver seat.

## 643 The Blessings For The Bride...

With shaking hands, the driver started the car, his sight looking at the two sitting at the back passenger seat through the rear-view mirror. Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun were looking out of the car window on their sides silently.

Just then, the driver heard a cold voice.

“Stick your eyes to the road if you don’t want all of us to die.”

Though Jiang Yuyan was looking out of the car window, she could sense the driver’s curious gaze on her and Lu Lijun.

The driver immediately averted his sight and focused on the road ahead. When they reached the home and entered the courtyard, it shocked the servants working around to see Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun. No one dared to ask anything but to whisper among themselves.

Jiang Yuyan directly went to the living room of the main house, where, as expected by her, all the family members were present to go to the temple. Though she was worried about what the people she loved with say or how they will react, Jiang Yuyan didn’t want to leave the chance to mock Su Hui and enjoyed seeing her in a devastating state.

As expected, Jiang Yuyan got the same reaction from Su Hui while she felt hurt to see other family members who left without saying a word. Still, Jiang Yuyan didn’t show it on the face as she didn’t want to show her weak side to Su Hui.

Leaving Su Hui humiliated by showing the marriage proof and indicating how her precious son was not worth for her to marry him, Jiang Yuyan left with Lu Lijun.

When Lu Feng came to Jiang Yuyan when he got to know about the wedding and when she showed him the video, Jiang Yuyan enjoyed seeing Lu Feng shocked, but when she got to know the truth, she cursed herself. Jiang Yuyan couldn’t sleep

as she felt worried about Lu Feng and dialed San Zemin's number.

"Lu Feng left the home a few hours back, can you check where he is?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

It was the first time when instead of ordering, Jiang Yuyan made a request to San Zemin.

"Yes, I will," San Zemin replied and Jiang Yuyan hung up the call.

The next morning when Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun went for breakfast, the other family members were there too. All were silent on the breakfast table, but there was something going on in Su Hui's mind.

Before they could start eating, Su Hui spoke, "Wait. I think we all are forgetting the important thing."

Everyone looked at her while Jiang Yuyan was waiting to see what Su Hui was up to this time.

"We forget that we have a newly wedded bride here and as a tradition, we should give her our blessings by giving her money." As Su Hui said it, there was a smirk on her lips.

Su Hui understood, Jiang Yuyan married Lu Lijun to avoid getting married to someone else and this marriage had no meaning for her. In the future, Jiang Yuyan will call it an illegal marriage as Lu Lijun was a kid when he married her and she will be free from this unwanted marriage. Knowing the fact and as the revenge for humiliating her, Su Hui didn't want to miss a chance to mock Jiang Yuyan.

Others didn't like the way Su Hui acted but they couldn't say anything as they couldn't deny the fact that Jiang Yuyan married to Lu Lijun for real and if they deny this marriage that means they will cause Jiang Yuyan's efforts to fail and it will give a chance to Su Hui to trouble Jiang Yuyan again.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Su Hui with a displeased gaze, but Su Hui greeted her with a fake smile, her sight showing she would not make it easy for Jiang Yuyan.

“As a bride, you should bow to all the family members and get their blessings. C’mon get up and do it so that we won’t be late for breakfast,” Su Hui instructed.

Not willing to create the scene early morning and to show this was the real wedding for her, Jiang Yuyan got up from the table as she couldn’t say she was not the bride. When she had done it on her own, she had to face the consequences too, not to forget this cunning woman in front of her.

Jiang Yuyan went to the grandpa and bowed to him, and grandpa couldn’t help but look at her helplessly to think how much humiliation this girl has to go through.

Just then Su Hui said, “Father, don’t worry. I have prepared the red packet for the bride from all of us, as I know you all are still in shock with what unfortunate our new bride did and you didn’t give a thought about the traditions but I am here to handle everything.”

Saying Su Hui signaled her daughter-in-law and Qin Xiu went to three members of the Lu family to put the red packet in front of them. Elder Lu didn’t pick the red packet, and instead, he pulled out the money from his pocket and put all of them in Jiang Yuyan’s hand.

Jiang Yuyan accepted it as his blessings while the elder Lu held her hands in his and said, “Remember, whatever you do, I am with you.”

Hearing these words, Jiang Yuyan felt emotional and didn’t know what to say. She was thinking all would be upset with her because of what she did and especially she was worried about hurting the grandpa.

“Thank you, grandpa.” Her voice was low and heavy as she said it and her eyes teary.

When Jiang Yuyan went to grandma Zhao Shuang, the grandma too didn’t pick the red packet in front of her and instead pulled out the bracelet from her hand which she wore all the time for so many years. It was old and designed in the Traditional Chinese style.



## 644 Giving Her A Power...

“This was given to me by my mother-in-law to keep all the negative forces away and I am giving it to you. I wish this will help you too,” said grandma as she put the bracelet on Jiang Yuyan’s wrist.

Su Hai was unhappy with how the elders were supporting Jiang Yuyan instead of opposing her deed. What Su Hui had planned failed and she had to witness the show of affection which annoyed her.

The last one was Ning Jiahui and Su Hui was waiting for at least she will act unhappy with Jiang Yuyan but when Jiang Yuyan went to Ning Jiahui, what happened next shocked Su Hui even more.

Ning Jiahui held Jiang Yuyan’s hand and put the bunch of keys in it as she said, “From now on, this entire family is your responsibility. These are not just keys but the power you have and I am sure, after this, no one will dare to trouble you. If they do, you can show them what you are.”

It surprised Jiang Yuyan as she never expected these things. “But mother, I can’t...”

“Trust me, you can,” Ning Jiahui interrupted Jiang Yuyan and she had to accept it in the end.

Those keys belonged to Ning Jiahui as she was the one to handle the family matters, being the elder daughter-in-law of the family and Lu Jinhai’s wife. Those keys were of the family safe that had all the important things kept in it. The person having the keys could indirectly handle and look into the wealth of Lu Family. The power that Ning Jiahui had for all these years had given to Jiang Yuyan now, and it showed Ning Jiahui accepted her as Lu Lijun’s wife.

Ning Jiahui’s intentions behind doing so were she wanted Jiang Yuyan to spend her time in the family in peace and this was the only way by giving her the power. Though Ning Jiahui

knew the marriage between Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan held no value, she thought it would be better to accept it for the time being, for the sake of her son and Jiang Yuyan.

Su Hui didn't like it and said, "Elder sister, Yuyan is still young to handle it. You should not..."

Ning Jiahui looked at Su Hui, her sight cold and devoid of any emotion. "She had handled the worst thing at this young age so this is nothing for her. Moreover, she is my daughter-in-law and after me, it belongs to her only, so it's better to do it sooner than later."

Ning Jiahui clarified and Su Hui had nothing to say but to stay silent.

Mo Ruolan who was sitting silently beside Ning Jiahui, looked at her daughter and then looked at Lu Lijun who was eating his breakfast, not minding what was going around.

Mo Ruolan knew her daughter had a second marriage in her destiny but never ever she expected to happen it like this. It was simply not acceptable for her as Lu Lijun was a kid but she couldn't do anything but to sigh deep inside.

Jiang Yuyan went to Su Hui, though she didn't want to, but Su Hui was one elder in the family.

Jiang Yuyan bowed to her a little and Su Hui handed her over the red packet but her cunning mouth didn't stop from spurting out nonsense, "I wish for the long and successful married life for you and Lu Lijun."

It was a sarcastic remark from Su Hui but Jiang Yuyan couldn't say anything in her defense as Lu Lijun was her husband in other's perspective.

Qin Xiu gave her a red packet too as she said, "I wish the same for you as mother."

Jiang Yuyan said nothing to Qin Xiu too and called the servant who was busy taking care of the breakfast. When the servant came to her, Jiang Yuyan handed her over the two red packets given by Su Hui and Qin Xiu.

“Use this to feed beggars around,” Jiang Yuyan instructed, and the servant nodded.

It left Su Hui and Qin Xiu furious but before they could say anything grandpa instructed, “We are leaving for the city today. Everyone pack your stuff.”

“Father, my son is nowhere as he didn’t come back home. How come we go back? Don’t know what he must do after such humiliation he got.”

Saying, Su Hui looked at Jiang Yuyan who sat back in her chair. Not paying attention to Su Hui, Jiang Yuyan said, “Grandpa. Lu Feng went back to the city.”

Jiang Yuyan got to know about Lu Feng’s whereabouts through San Zemin as she too was worried about him.

“What can he do after what you did with him,” said Su Hui.

“It was after you forced him to marry Yuyan when he didn’t want to. It’s your fault, Su Hui,” said grandma, who was quiet till now.

“How come my son didn’t want to marry her when he liked...”

“Su Hui.”

Everyone heard the cold and the loud voice of elder Lu which interrupted Su Hui and transformed the atmosphere in dead silence.

“Watch your words. Everyone get back to the rooms and pack all of your bags.”

The reason elder Lu interrupted Su Hui was, he knew Su Hui would say that Lu Feng liked Jiyang Yuyan, but elder Lu didn’t want Su Hui to say it. Saying elder Lu left and others too followed his instructions.

---

In Xi Residence...

When everyone was having breakfast, Xi Cheng spoke, “Step-mother, how was the business trip that you went on a few days

back?” His lips carried a light mocking smirk as he knew what was the status after Lu Qiang’s death.

“None of my business should concern you. Just focus on your own work,” Song Meilin replied, not even sparing a glance to him.

“I will follow your words step-mother as there is much more I have to learn from you,” Xi Cheng commented.

“I am sorry to disappoint but I can’t teach you immoral things,” Song Meilin countered.

“I am done with immoral things so now it’s time for me to follow the morals,” Xi Cheng said again.

The other three were eating silently as this mocking session was nothing new for them.

Giving out a deep sigh, Song Meilin said, “You can learn it from your own mother as I am sure she has yet to do her best to teach you morals.”

This startled Xi Cheng’s mother but as usual she avoided saying anything, trying to be a good person in Xi Guiren’s eyes.

## 645 Saying Bye...

Song Meilin's words didn't affect Xi Cheng and he said as he smiled lightly, "Step-mother sure is very good with words. This is the first thing I will learn from you as it might come in handy shutting a few annoying mouths." Before Song Meilin could get back at him, Xi Cheng moved his sights to Nixxxie, "Little sister!"

Nixxxie gave him a displeased look and Xi Cheng continued, "From annoying mouths, I suddenly remembered about Doctor Jiang Yang. How is he doing after his best friend's death?"

"Well enough to kick a few rotten brains," Nixxxie replied as she was annoyed with the way Xi Cheng talked.

"Seems like I offended the little sister but I will accept your angry words as I love my sister a lot."

"You can keep your love for others, as I am happy with the love I get from doctor Jiang Yang."

Nothing could upset Xi Cheng, but these words from Nixxxie did. His eyes turned cold with the way Nixxxie talked and Xi Cheng couldn't help but frown inside.

Nixxxie just didn't stop at this and called the servant, "Make sure to cook the lunch that includes favorite dishes of doctor Jiang Yang as I will take lunch for him today."

"Okay, young mistress." Nodding, the servant left.

The grip of Xi Cheng's hand tightened on the chopsticks as he looked at Nixxxie with an angry gaze but before Xi Cheng could say anything, Xi Guiren spoke up, "We have an important meeting, Xi Cheng. I hope everything is ready."

"Rest assured, father, preparing everything perfectly is my habit," Xi Cheng commented with the hidden meaning into his words that others understood but couldn't say anything.

At lunchtime, Nixxxie left to go to the hospital with lunch for Jiang Yang. Since she realized her stepbrother might have

something to do with Lu Qiang's death, she couldn't be at peace and all the time she wished that it should not be the case.

Unknowingly, Nixxxie distanced herself from Jiang Yang, but all these days she missed him and wanted to check on him. Jiang Yang was too busy and worried about Lu Jinhai's condition, so he didn't pay much attention to it.

Nixxxie had already got to know about Jiang Yang's schedule from the hospital and came there at the time when Jiang Yang was free and he could have lunch.

---

In Jiang Yang's cabin...

Hearing the knock on the door, Jiang instructed, "Come in."

Nixxxie entered holding one bag in her hand and Jiang Yang's face brightened up seeing her. Getting up from the chair, he straightway went to her and hugged her. "Finally, I can breathe." Jiang Yang commented as he inhaled deeply. Her sweet scent calmed his stressed brain.

Nixxxie hugged him back with the one hand that was empty and had a smile on her face. All the questions and doubts going in her mind when she was on the way to the hospital, they all disappeared in a moment.

"I brought lunch for you," Nixxxie informed as Jiang Yang finally let her go.

Cupping her face in his hands and looking into her eyes, he said, "Thank you for showing up finally." His sight full of love and in showing how much he missed her.

When Jiang Yang said it, Nixxxie felt guilty. With no solid reason or the proof about her stepbrother's involvement in Lu Qiang's accident, she distanced herself from Jiang Yang so she tried to explain, "You were busy so I didn't feel it right to disturb you."

"You are not the disturbance but my energy booster. You should keep showing now and then," Jiang Yang said as the

smile painted on his lips, being unaware of what was going on her mind all this time.

“I will now let’s have lunch.” Both went to their small comfortable world and that was Jiang Yang’s resting room.

---

As instructed by elder Lu, all were ready with the bags to go back to the city. Before that, Jiang Yuyan thought to visit Lu Qiang’s grave as she didn’t know when she could come back here to meet him again.

When Jiang Yuyan was about to leave, Lu Lijun tagged along and she took him with her. When they reached Lu Qiang’s grave, Jiang Yuyan offered half of the flowers in her hand to Lu Lijun while half she carried. She kept the flower on the grave and signaled Lu Lijun to do the same.

Though Lu Lijun was silent, his eyes carried the emotions of feeling hurt to realize his brother was not with him and he can only see him like this. Sitting down, he touched Lu Qiang’s name carved on the tombstone. This was the first time tears rolled down his eyes after the day Jiang Yuyan made him cry.

“Elder brother,” the word left his mouth as he cried.

Jiang Yuyan too couldn’t stop her tears. Not disturbing Lu Lijun, Jiang Yuyan knelt down and spoke, “Don’t miss me too much as I know you can’t be without me for a long time and always follow me wherever I go. This time I desperately want you to follow me or surprise me with your sudden appearance but I know you can’t”

Her throat felt choked, but she continued, “I.. I...can just wish those days to come back....I really miss those days and I miss you, Lu Qiang that I feel like I will die. Can’t you...can’t you show up at least once..just once?”

Though Jiang Yuyan didn’t want to cry and knew her calling him back didn’t make any sense and can’t change the fact that he was gone but she wanted to beg him. Just one wish she had if she could see him again at least once and tell him how much she loved him.

As she broke into a cry, Lu Lijun too didn't disturb her and stood up silently, his eyes teary. They both could understand what the other needed and it was the best thing they shared.

Wiping her tears Jiang Yuyan continued, "I will be a bad Yuyan that you wouldn't like to see me as but I hope you will forgive me. I am sorry that I have to go away from here but I will make sure to visit you once in a while."

Once she was done and said bye to Lu Qiang, both left the place and went back to the home from where all the family members left for the city.



## 646 Sad Fate...

In the evening...

Returning to the city, Lu Family members went to the Lu Mansion while Mo Ruolan went to Jiang Residence.

Jiang Peizhi was waiting for his wife to return while Jiang Yang was in the hospital as usual. Both being unaware of what had happened in the village and Mo Ruolan didn't know how to tell them about this.

Mo Ruolan was silent since she returned and Jiang Peizhi thought it must be because she was tired but in the night, he saw her shedding tears while standing near the window.

Jiang Peizhi got up from the bed and went to his wife. "What happened?" he asked straightway as he knew she was crying.

Startled by his sudden voice, Mo Ruolan wiped the tears in a hurry. Not turning to look at her husband, Mo Ruolan replied, "Nothing. Just I could not sleep."

Though the light in the room was dim, Jiang Peizhi could sense she was crying and turned her around to face him.

"Why are you crying?" he asked.

"I was thinking about Yuyan."

"Hmm!" Jiang Peizhi took her to the bed and let her sit at its edge. Offering her water, he asked, "Tell me what is going on in your mind?"

After spending more than half of their lifetime together, Jiang Peizhi was familiar with each action of his wife and it didn't take him much time to guess something was not right.

Jiang Peizhi calmly waited for his wife to answer.

"I think I could have stopped all this from happening but I didn't," Mo Ruolan spoke, her eyes still teary and voice heavy.

"Why are you thinking like this? There are things we can't stop even if we try."

“Mo Ruolan looked at her husband and asked, “Do you remember, once I said Yuyan might get married twice?”

“Hmm!” he looked at her to continue.

“I could have stopped it if I had completely believed in what the master said at that time. Lu Qiang loved her so much that I thought he would never divorce her and her fate might change but never ever I thought he would leave her like this.”

“What are you trying to say?” Jiang Peizhi asked, knowing she was overthinking.

“Yuyan’s fate had brought death upon him. If I had opposed the marriage or didn’t bring Yuyan back here, he would be alive. It’s all my fault to bring her back to China and they met and fell in love. If only I had kept her there, all this wouldn’t have happened.”

“Don’t think like this. It was written in Lu Qiang’s fate too. If he had only this much life to live, then it would be the same even if the means would have been different,” Jiang Peizhi countered to console her.

“Still, I can’t stop blaming myself for his death and our daughter’s suffering. It would have been better if she had stayed lonely for her life. At least Lu Qiang would be alive and Yuyan would have been living her dream somewhere far, even though she had planned to be alone for her life.”

Mo Ruolan couldn’t stop crying out loud as the guilt and pain she was feeling was too heavy. Jiang Peizhi hugged her to console her, but it made her cry even more.

“Only if I had listened to her when she said she didn’t want to come to china. Only if I had stopped meddling in her life and making decisions for her, only if...”

Jiang Peizhi interrupted his wife, “It’s not your fault, Ruolan. Stop blaming yourself. I told you even then too that we can’t change what is in one’s destiny.”

“But why does our daughter have such a bad fate written? First, her husband left, and now she had to marry a kid. Why?”

Her last words shocked Jiang Peizhi, but he thought he had heard something wrong. Letting her go from his hold, Jiang Peizhi looked at his wife, “What did you just say?”

“You heard it right. Yuyan got married.”

Jiang Peizhi exclaimed as it was a shocking thing for him. “What?” and the next words he heard were even shocking for him.

“She married Lu Lijun.”

Getting out of the bed angrily, Jiang Peizhi asked, “This is not the time to say whatever you feel. Get back to your senses.”

“I am talking the truth and this is what happened.”

“How can this be? If it’s the truth, then let me go get the answers,” Saying, Jiang Peizhi turned to get his jacket that was hung up on the jacket stand, his intentions clear, to get the answers from the Lus.

He sent his daughter to their family trusting them and it was fine. Her husband died, it was fine too as there was nothing anyone could do about but how can they make her marry at such a time and that too with a kid.

So many thoughts ran in his mind as he thought they must have forced her to marry Lu Lijun given his bad condition and must be because all of Lu Qiang’s wealth had gone to Jiang Yuyan.

“How can they do this with her?” Jiang Peizhi said as he wore his jacket.

“It was Yuyan’s decision. No one asked her to marry him,” said Mo Ruolan as she saw her calm husband burning in anger.

This shocked Jiang Peizhi again, and he looked at his wife in disbelief.

“Calm down first and I will explain everything to you.”

Jiang Peizhi went back to the bed where his wife was sitting and sat back. Mo Ruolan explained everything to him and Jiang Peizhi could just give out a deep sigh hearing it.

Not knowing what to do, Jiang Peizhi said, “It’s simply not acceptable. How can....”

“I know what you are thinking as I was the same when it happened. We can’t change the fact and can’t think about why she has done this, but at this moment we should just trust and support her.”

“How can I support such an outrageous decision and let her ruin her life?”

## 647 Her Intentions...

“Yuyan must have thought about everything before taking a step. Don’t forget she is not any ordinary girl as we know what she is,” Mo Ruolan commented.

“Whatever it is but for me she is my daughter who needs her father to protect her but every time her father failed to do so,” said Jiang Peizhi, his eyes turned teary.

“I feel the same as you, but I have decided to let her do what she wants and I wish you to do the same.”

“What else can we do? Is there even any option left for us?” Jiang Peizhi questioned, he looked frustrated with what his daughter did.

“Let it be for time being and wait for what she wants to do. We all should give her time to cope with it.”

“Hmm! I’ll go meet her tomorrow,” Jiang Peizhi declared and it worried Mo Ruolan.

“Be calm when you will see her.”

“Don’t worry. I am not going to confront her. What’s the use when a person is already hurt to not get affected by small things. I want to be by her side as her father.”

“Hmm!”

---

The same night...

The Night was the time when Jiang Yuyan could get time for her other things as in the daytime, Lu Lijun was always around her. It would be her daily schedule to be an angel for Lu Lijun in the daytime and be in her devil form at night.

As usual, making sure that Lu Lijun was in a deep sleep, Jiang Yuyan went to the gallery and called San Zemin.

San Zemin was already expecting to get the call as he knew his boss was back in the city.

The moment San Zemin picked up the call, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Where is Lu Feng?”

Lu Feng was not home since the day he came to the city and it worried Jiang Yuyan and other family members too though it was nothing new for them when Lu Feng didn’t return home for days.

“He is in his home,” San Zemin replied.

“His home?” It was something new for Jiang Yuyan.

“He has his own place to stay.”

“How is he?” Jiang Yuyan asked, though her voice was cold, inside she was worried about Lu Feng.

“He didn’t step out of the home even once since when he went there, so we can’t guess what is he doing.”

It worried Jiang Yuyan even more. “Why didn’t you check on him? It’s not that he doesn’t know you. You seem to be his friend.”

The last line was a sarcastic remark from Jiang Yuyan as it pissed her off that San Zemin didn’t check on Lu Feng. Since the day Jiang Yuyan saw them together in the night at Lu Mansion, she knew San Zemin and Lu Feng knew each other.

Her words startled San Zemin, but he replied, “He doesn’t like it if we spy on him. He will get to know it and that would be worse.”

“Seems like you have done it before?” Jiang Yuyan commented.

San Zemin agreed, “Hmm! In the past when the boss ordered us to do so, he caught us spying on him that made him angry and later he shifted to another place that it was hard to find him.”

Ignoring San Zemin, Jiang Yuyan said, “I will go there tomorrow.”

“But, Mrs. Lu.....”

“I need to fix what I broke.”

San Zemin understood and said, “The car and the driver would be ready whenever Mrs. Lu wants.”

“Hmm!” As Jiang Yuyan was about to be hung up the call, San Zemin spoke, “Mrs. Lu!”

Jiang Yuyan didn't hang up and waited for San Zemin to continue.

“I wish you to visit a place that belongs to you now,” said San Zemin.

“Soon but I hope till then you will keep everything ready. The time I have given to you is about to end.”

Not Waiting for San Zemin's reply, Jiang Yuyan hung up the call. She knew what place San Zemin was talking about, but her first goal was to go to Lu Feng while the second one was to plan everything properly.

—

The next morning, Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan went to see their daughter. Jiang Yuyan was in the garden's gazebo with Lu Lijun and seeing her parents there, she guessed why her father was there.

“Lu Lijun, be here and draw whatever you want till then I will talk to my parents.”

Lu Lijun nodded and Jiang Yuyan went to her parents, who were standing at a distance from the gazebo.

Seeing how she was taking care of Lu Lijun and how her all the time was only for Lu Lijun, they felt worried as she will always be doing this and there would be no future for her.

Jiang Yuyan greeted her parents. Both sides didn't know how to start the conversation.

“How are you doing?” Finally, Jiang Peizhi asked.

“I am well, father.” After this reply, there was an awkward silence, but Jiang Yuyan thought to come to the point.

“I know why you are here, father. You can scold me or say whatever you want, but this is the choice I made and I don't

regret it.” Jiang Yuyan declared as her sight passed across Lu Lijun, who was busy drawing.

“I am just worried about your future. Nothing else,” said Jiang Peizhi.

“There is no future left for me, father as it all ended up with him. What left now is the responsibilities he passed to me,” Jiang Yuyan countered.

Hearing such heavy words from their young daughter, both didn't know what to say.

“You can take your time till Lu Lijun gets better and later.....”

Jiang Yuyan interrupted her mother. “Mother, don't expect me to leave all this and start my life anew because I don't wish to do so. There are a lot more things for me to do, I hope both of you won't ask me to back down.”

“We are not stopping you from doing anything. We just don't want you to do something that might harm you. In the past, you....”

Jiang Yuyan again interrupted her mother, “I might do worse than what I did in the past and I don't want this to hide from you. It would be better if you won't worry about me.” Jiang Yuyan declared that scared the parents.



## 648 Shocked Brother...

“Then, promise me one thing,” said Jiang Peizhi.

“I can if it’s acceptable,” Jiang Yuyan countered.

“You won’t let anything harm you and you will always be safe.”

“Rest assured, father. I have to keep myself safe for the sake of someone who needs me,” Jiang Yuyan said as she looked at Lu Lijun and her parents followed her sight too.

At this moment, they felt relieved to have Lu Lijun as Jiang Yuyan will think twice before doing anything rash for his sake.

Her parents went to see the elders while Jiang Yuyan went back to Lu Lijun.

“Have you finished already?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she noticed, Lu Lijun put the paper back in one empty file which Jiang Yuyan gave him to collect all his drawings. Her behavior was totally different from how she was with her parents a while ago. One could see her having pleasant expressions whenever she was in front of Lu Lijun.

Lu Lijun nodded and she commented, “That was so fast. Let me see what you drew.”

Saying, Jiang Yuyan picked up the file to check what he drew and it surprised her.

He made the pencil sketch of Jiang Yuyan, who was standing far away from him in the garden with her parents. He just drew her side face which had her golden-brown hair left open and the light breeze disturbed a few strands hanging at the side of her face.

“Hmm! It’s nice but next time I want you to draw other things than me. You see there are so many beautiful things around or how about we go somewhere out so you can see nice things and draw even better,” Jiang Yuyan asked and Lu Lijun nodded to the idea.

Jiang Yuyan was trying her best to make him lively like before and speak the way he used to. That sarcastic and good with words little iceberg was lost somewhere and it seemed like there was no one in his world other than Jiang Yuyan.

It worried Jiang Yuyan thinking that he might get a problem with socializing with others and he will always be aloof like this when her dream was to make him like Lu Qiang who will take his position in the family and the business.

Jiang Yuyan took him out to spend a day with him and to change his mood.

---

The Jiang couple went to the elders, where Ning Jiahui accompanied them too, in the elder's room.

As they all sat on the couch and elder Lu sat in his chair, he said, "Jiang Peizhi, you can get angry with me as I know what you are feeling at the moment and I am ready to accept my fault of not being able to take care of Yuyan."

Jiang Peizhi felt bad hearing it as he didn't have such intentions and said, "You are taking me wrong, father. I am here to just check on your health. What I had to say, I already said, it to Yuyan."

"It would be better if we leave her alone to let her do what she wants," the elder Lu suggested and others agreed.

"Lu Jinhai is still in bad condition. I will go see him today," elder Lu informed.

"Don't tire yourself, father. No one is allowed to go inside and I and Jiang Yang are always there," Jiang Peizhi countered.

"Still, I need to check on him," elder Lu insisted.

"Then, I'll take you there, father," Jiang Peizhi offered and elder Lu nodded.

---

Jiang Yang was in the hospital when elder Lu and Jiang Peizhi visited there. Other than his patients, Jiang Yang's whole

attention was on Lu Jinhai's condition and because of him the other family members could relax and worry less.

Lu Linhai was still in a comatose state and there was no improvement in his condition.

"When can he wake up?" elder Lu asked as they looked at Lu Jinhai through the glass barrier.

"It's difficult to say anything, grandpa. He might wake up anytime soon or it might take more than months," Jiang Yang replied.

"I hope he will wake up soon so that this family can get back to its feet again," elder Lu commented, his voice emotional and eyes teary.

"Don't worry grandpa, he will."

As they went to the waiting room and sat on the sofa, Jiang Yang decided to tell them something that he didn't as the conditions were already sad.

"There is something I want to tell you, grandpa," Jiang Yang said.

"Hmm!"

"Uncle had a serious injury on his spine and affected it badly so once he woke up, it might be difficult for him to walk or he might now walk, ever."

There was no surprise or shocked reaction from elder Lu as if he was already expecting to get one more sad news and said, "I just wish him to wake up first."

Jiang Peizhi felt sad for his friend but agreed with elder Lu, "I wish the same, father." Turning to look at his son, Jiang Peizhi spoke again, "There is something I need to tell you too, Jiang Yang."

"Yes, father," Jiang Yang replied, being ready to hear and get the shock.

"Yuyan..." Jiang Peizhi stopped not knowing how to continue and seeing his father after taking Yuyan's name, it scared Jiang Yang.

“W-What happened to her? Is she alright?” he asked, anxious and worried.

Jiang Yang didn't worry about his sister after seeing her acting strong for the sake of Lu Lijun and he knew she won't do anything to harm herself again. Also, he trusted the family that they would take care of her when he was busy handling the things in the hospital for Lu Jinhai.

Not even in his dream, he thought that something will happen that will shock him, and later he will curse himself for ignoring her and not being able to take care of her.

“Yuyan got married,” Jiang Peizhi informed.

In a shock, Jiang Yang exclaimed, “What?”

Jiang Yang couldn't believe his father's words. For him, Yuyan marrying someone was the most impossible thing. The entire world can move upside down but she won't ever marry anyone, he was sure of this one thing.

## 649 The Prettiest...

“Yes, but don’t worry, it’s not a legal marriage.” Jiang Peizhi’s words shocked his son even more.

“Not legal? Whom did she marry?” Jiang Yang asked, the worry evident in his eyes.

“Lu Lijun!”

As his father answered, Jiang Yang didn’t know what to say and looked at both the men in front of him in disbelief.

“Calm down, Jiang Yang,” said grandpa as he continued. “It’s all my family’s fault that she had to do it.”

“How can I calm down? I left her with the family as I trusted everyone, but this happened. How could you all let this happen? She is still not out of her pain and Lu Lijun is a kid... I mean.. How?”

Jiang Yang was so frustrated and angry that he forgot who was sitting in front of him. He just wanted his answers. Nobody mattered in front of his sister then, whoever it is.

“It was her own choice,” Jiang Peizhi said while grandpa was speechless as he was feeling guilty about all this.

Jiang Peizhi explained everything to him and Jiang Yang sputtered out, “Now I know why Lu Feng hates that woman. If I was there, I would have showed that woman her place. How dare she force Yuyan like this?”

The thing that his parents couldn’t say even though they knew it was all Su Hui’s doing, Jiang Yang said it without thinking twice even though grandpa was sitting there.

“Be careful with your words, Jiang Yang. don’t forget who is in front of you,” Jiang Peizhi warned as he didn’t like what Jiang Yang said.

Elder Lu, the person sitting there, was like a father for Jiang Peizhi and he would never tolerate if someone disrespected his

father. Su Hui was elder Lu's daughter-in-law, his family, and saying something about her was like saying it to elder Lu.

Though it was Su Hui's doing, No one forced Yuyan to marry Lu Lijun and she had an option to go back to her parent's home or being stubborn about not marrying anyone but she chose it herself so Jiang Peizhi could blame no one but his daughter.

"I am sorry, grandpa," said Jiang Yang as he understood his father's words.

"You need not apologize to me as I know I am at fault and as an elder I should have stopped it from happening. I am the one to blame," said elder Lu.

As the deed had already done, there was no use of saying anything.

"How is Lu Feng?" Jiang Yang asked as he realised this was the reason he couldn't reach Lu Feng for a few days.

"No one saw him since the day before the wedding. He left home in anger and didn't come back. Yuyan said he came back to the city, but he didn't go to Lu Mansion." Elder Lu replied, feeling worried about Lu Feng.

So many things were there to worry about that it was difficult to think about just one thing. Moreover, elder Lu knew Lu Feng would be fine as he was not a weak person.

"I know where he can be. I will go to him in the evening once I finish my work here," Jiang Yang informed and elder Lu nodded.

---

Jiang Yuyan took Lu Lijun to the beautiful place outside the city. The car and the driver were the same arranged by San Zemin. It was a hillside and only a few tourists visited that place. Jiang Yuyan wanted to take him to crowded places so he could be among people but at such time they would be the point of attraction for others and not to forget the journalists trying to click her pictures to create news.

When they reached the hillside, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Isn’t it beautiful, Lu Lijun?” and continued looking at the vast view in front of them which had valleys and the rows of multiple hills.

Lu Lijun nodded as his sight was observing the same view too. There was a brightness in his dull eyes seeing this and Jiang Yuyan noticed it. She felt as if her effort was successful at some point.

“So, you can watch this and if you want, you can draw this too,” Jiang Yuyan instructed.

Nodding, Lu Lijun opened his bag and sat down on the grass while Jiang Yuyan continued looking at the hills. Her expressions turned to as if her eyes were searching for someone far away across those hills.

Closing her eyes to feel the breeze, she thought, ‘I wish if you were here with me, Lu Qiang’.

With that pleasantly passing breeze, Jiang Yuyan was trying to feel Lu Qiang as if he was passing across her and she tried to get hold of him.

When Jiang Yuyan passed her time like this, Lu Lijun was doing his work. In a while, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and thought to go to Lu Lijun.

Sitting beside him, Jiang Yuyan saw the sheet in Lu Lijun’s hand was blank and he drew nothing. It surprised her as he could draw anything in just a few minutes and there were over fifteen minutes passed by but he didn’t draw. Not asking him anything, she said, “Let’s draw something together.”

Lu Lijun nodded and both started to draw. In a while, both finished their works and Jiang Yuyan said, “Let’s see who did it better.”

“Lu Lijun showed her his drawing and she showed hers. “Lu Lijun, mine is better than yours. Finally, there is one thing I am better than you at.”

“Glad to see the birdie brain can be good at something,” Lu Lijun mumbled.

“What? What did you say?” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed, but it was not because she was angry, but because Lu Lijun finally said something.

Realizing what he did, Lu Lijun stayed silent and didn't answer her. Controlling her excitement, Jiang Yuyan spoke, acting angry, “You called me birdie brain. Well, still you can't deny I am better.”

Lu Lijun didn't react, but Jiang Yuyan was happy that he reacted and he would be like before again. Getting up from her place, Jiang Yuyan went ahead and held her drawing up just to say, “See, mine exactly the same and the prettiest one.”

When she was looking at the hills and her drawing, Lu Lijun pulled out one sheet from the file which he hid from Jiang Yuyan, in which he already drew something and mumbled to himself, “The Prettiest.”



## 650 Cold And Cunning...

It was the drawing of Jiang Yuyan that Lu Lijun drew when Jiang Yuyan was enjoying the cool breeze while remembering Lu Qiang but Lu Lijun hid it from her before she came to him and she was surprised to see a blank sheet in his hands thinking he drew nothing.

In that sheet, Lu Lijun drew Jiang Yuyan standing facing the hills with her eyes closed and enjoying the breeze. She looked at peace and calm.

When Jiang Yuyan came back to him with her drawing, Lu Lijun hid it again and only held the drawing of the hills in his hands.

“I think we should leave before it gets too late,” said Jiang Yuyan and nodding, Lu Lijun started to pack his stuff carefully, not letting that file get into Jiang Yuyan’s hands.

As there was a sheet in Jiang Yuyan’s hands, she wanted to keep it in that file too. The moment she touched the file, Lu Lijun pulled it back that shocked her.

“I just want to keep my drawing in your file.” As Jiang Yuyan said it, Lu Lijun took the drawing sheet from her hands and put it inside the file, not letting her touch it.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t give a thought about it, as she thought most of the time Lu Lijun didn’t like it if someone touched his things.

Lu Lijun put the file back in his bag and both left after collecting the whole stuff.

When both reached Lu Mansion, Jiang Yuyan didn’t know after spending a peaceful time out, she had to face annoying people and their words too.

The moment Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun entered the living room, she saw Su Hui and her daughter-in-law were there too. Ignoring them, she took steps towards the staircase, but she heard the woman.

“You were out for so long, Yuyan.”

Ignoring Su Hui’s words, Jiang Yuyan continued to walk ahead as she didn’t wish to argue with that woman, but she heard the aunt again.

“Did you hear me? You should be inside the home mourning over the things instead of having fun out. What will the people say?”

Not reacting to Su Hui’s words, Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lijun and said, “Lu Lijun, go to your room and I will be there in some time.”

Nodding Lu Lijun left and seeing him reaching upstairs and making sure he went to the room, Jiang Yuyan inhaled deeply and turned to face the annoying woman in her life.

“I wanted to mourn over my husband’s death, aunt Su Hui but you were the one who couldn’t see me sad and wanted me to get married soon,” replied Jiang Yuyan as if Su Hui’s words didn’t matter to her.

Stepping towards Jiang Yuyan, Su Hui asked, “Is this what you call marriage?”

“I didn’t want to, but the so-called customs that you followed, gave me permission to call it a marriage,” Jiang Yuyan replied, looking straight into Su Hui’s eyes.

“You are being so blunt to argue with elders now, huh?”

It surprised Su Hui to see Jiang Yuyan talking back at her when she was always so silent before, whenever Su Hui said something to her. Other than the day of her wedding with Lu Lijun, it was the second time Jiang Yuyan talked back.

Giving out a light chuckle, Jiang Yuyan said, “Elders? I don’t see anyone here.”

This angered Su Hui and she said, “If you were my daughter-in-law, then...”

“You should be thankful that this blunt woman is not your daughter-in-law or you never know what I would have done with you and your son,” said Jiang Yuyan interrupting Su Hui.

“I wonder what gives the audacity to act like this? People in this home had given you so much freedom.”

“Do you not know, aunt Su hui? Let me remind you again.”  
Saying Jiang Yuyan pulled out the bunch of keys from her sling bag and held it in front of Su Hui that made the elder lady frown.

Having a mocking smirk on her lips, Jiang Yuyan said,  
“This... This gave me power as I am the one who will handle this family.”

“You....”

“When did you come back Yuyan?”

Suddenly these women heard a voice that interrupted Su Hui and recognizing the voice, Jiang Yuyan kept silent.

It was Ning Jiahui who saw Jiang Yuyan and the other two ladies together and came there.

As Ning Jiahui reached Jiang Yuyan, she replied, “Just a while ago, mother.” Her expressions were gentle, opposite to how she looked while talking to Su Hui, cold and cunning.

Looking at the keys in Jiang Yuyan’s hands, Ning Jiahui asked, “Is someone trying to get these keys from you?” Her words directed towards Su Hui.

Before Su Hui could react, Jiang Yuyan spoke, “No mother. Aunt Su Hui was just making sure if I kept these keys safe or dropped somewhere.”

“Hmm!” Turning to look at Su Hui, Ning Jiahui declared,  
“You need not worry about these keys, Su Hui. I passed it to Yuyan because there is no one better than her who can handle it well.”

Ning Jiahui, who was always so sweet with Su Hui despite her bitter behavior, started to act bitter too. Ning Jiahui was upset with Su Hui the way she troubled everyone in the sad moments and she was the reason for the next unfortunate event in the family that affected Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun.

The way Su Hui acted so stubborn, ignoring everyone’s pleading, was the thing that Ning Jiahui would never forget.

Ning Jiahui's words hurt Su Hui, but there was nothing she could do. All the power in the family was with Jiang Yuyan and Ning Jiahui, so she could only pray that in business her husband and son would take over the power.

"Take rest as it must tire you," Ning Jiahui instructed Jiang Yuyan, nodding she left while Ning Jiahui went back to her room.

The two ladies left behind could only witness the affection between the other two and grit their teeth.

=====

Ranking went down even after giving more chapters yesterday... if it continues, you will get all the chapters in the privileged subscriptions only...

## 651 Missing Lu Feng...

In the evening, Jiang Yuyan left the home to look out for Lu Feng after leaving Lu Lijun with Lu Lian and informing her mother-in-law.

Ning Jiahui knew Jiang Yuyan had already taken Lu Qiang's place as she saw Jiang using the car that belonged to San Zemin's side, which was only controlled by Lu Qiang. Ning Jiahui never questioned Jiang Yuyan as she trusted her son's decision to entrust his responsibilities to his wife. Being a mother of the president and the wife of the chairman, Ning Jiahui was aware of everything.

San Zemin joined Jiang Yuyan too, as he too was worried about Lu Feng's whereabouts. When they reached Lu Feng's home, San Zemin rang the bell, but there was no reply. Jiang Yuyan looked at San Zemin knowing he must know the password of the door lock. San Zemin understood the meaning of his boss's gaze and entered the password.

Just then Jiang Yang arrived there and it surprised him to see his sister there with one man in a black suit. Jiang Yang had tried to call Lu Feng multiple times, but he still couldn't reach him and finally went to his place.

Both siblings were seeing each other after so many days. As much as Jiang Yang felt guilty about not being able to be with his sister, Jiang Yuyan looked like she didn't care about it. Also, she was not surprised to see her brother there as she was aware of the kind of a friendship these men shared.

"How are you?" Jiang Yang asked as there was an awkwardness in his behavior which resulted from the guilt feeling he had.

"I am fine, brother," Jiang Yuyan replied.

Jiang Yang looked at San Zemin and before he could ask, Jiang Yuyan answered, "He is San Zemin. Lu Qiang's man."

Jiang Yang was familiar with the name San Zemin as Lu Qiang and Lu Feng had mentioned so many times, so Jiang Yang thought to trust San Zemin and greeted him with a light nod to which San Zemin did the same.

San Zemin entered the room and Jinag Yang followed him while Jinag Yuyan stood outside to wait for these two to get Lu Feng.

Inside the apartment, both searched for Lu Feng, but he was not there. It shocked San Zemin as none of his men reported him about Lu Feng leaving the apartment while Jiang Yang was thinking where his friend must have gone.

San Zemin dialled the number of his main person and asked, "Didn't you know when Mr. Lu Feng left his apartment?"

The man answered, "I was about to inform you, boss. He left the flat early morning after fooling our men and they are still trying to get hold of him. We can't search his location as it seems like he turned off his cellphone and he left his car somewhere on the highway. Since then we have been searching for him."

"Why didn't you tell me this earlier? Haven't you learned from your past experience with him? Do I need to tell you how sharp he is to fool you all?" San Zemin asked, as his voice raised up in an annoyance.

"I know, boss. I'll try to get any information about him as soon as I can." As the man assured, San Zemin hung up the call.

"I am having a bad feeling about it." As San Zemin said it, Jiang Yang looked at him in a shock.

"What do you mean?" Jiang Yang asked and just then Jiang Yuyan, who was standing outside, entered the flat too as these two men didn't come out for long to inform her. She also heard San Zemin's conversation on the cellphone and looked at San Zemin with a questioning gaze.

Sensing these people waiting for the answers, San Zemin replied, "I don't know what to say but I think Mr. Lu Feng is up to something as he is hiding from us or he must be in real

trouble. He knows my men are keeping eyes on him and if there was nothing, he wouldn't have tried to hide.”

Hearing it, both the siblings looked at each other as if they knew what it must be.

Jiang Yuyan asked, “Have you collected all the information and proof I have asked you to?”

“I did and I have told Mrs. Lu that there are a lot more things I need to tell and show in person being our boss.”

San Zemin didn't want to tell everything just like that but wanted to give the whole idea to Jiang Yuyan. Also, he didn't want to tell Xi Cheng's name as Jiang Yang could be affected with it as Xi Cheng was related to his woman.

“Boss?” Jiang Yang exclaimed looking at his sister in surprise and Jiang Yuyan instructed, “Brother, this is not the time to explain anything. For now, we need to search for Lu Feng.”

“Hmm. I think we should hurry,” said Jiang Yang as he was thinking the same as his sister. Both knew Lu Feng was calm, but if something angered him, then there was no stopping for him.

Lu Feng was missing since the day he left the village. Jiang Yuyan thought Lu Feng must be angry at his brother and left while Jiang Yang thought, Lu Feng was affected by Jiang Yuyan's wedding with Lu Lijun who was still a kid and he must be angry with his mother for the reason of it all.

Just then Jiang Yang received the call from the hospital saying Lu Jinhai's condition worsened, so he had to go back to the hospital.

Jiang Yuyan asked her brother to go and assured him she would find Lu Feng and Jiang Yang left in a hurry.

Just then, one man of San Zemin came inside the flat in a hurry and showed something to San Zemin.

Seeing what was in the tablet, San Zemin spoke, “Seems like we are already late.”

“What happened,” As Jiang Yuyan asked, San Zemin handed her the tablet in his hands.

Reading it carefully, Jiang Yuyan asked, “So this is the one.”

Nodding, San Zemin confirmed, “Yes, one of those.”

“We need to make sure he won’t die.” These words from Jiang Yuyan surprised San Zemin, and he looked at her puzzled.

“I can’t allow him to die before suffering in my hands.” Jiang Yuyan declared, and San Zemin could see this woman in front of him is not an easy one.



# 652 Other Side Of The World...

San Zemin always thought, how can Mrs. Lu be so calm. If she really wanted to punish someone and if she was really seeking revenge, then why is she taking it slowly and why not give him orders directly to get the person and punish them. San Zemin only had one thing on his mind that what his new boss was exactly planning. He found her totally unpredictable as she hardly expressed herself. Her calmness was the thing that he found scary.

“I am sure this person is faking it and showing it as a big deal,” commented Jiang Yuyan.

“I think the same and if it’s done intentionally...”

“We need to find Lu Feng first,” Jiang Yuyan ordered, interrupting San Zemin.

“Our people are searching for him as they found his car on the highway. Now they just need to find out where he had gone,” San Zemin informed.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan suggested, “Today is the time you should introduce me to the other side of the world,”

Understanding his boss’s words, San Zemin led her way to the car.

They came out of the city and from the highway; the car took a turn which had a small road which had a single lane enough to let two cars pass each other. After passing a few kilometers on that road, the car took a turn on an even smaller road that entered the forest. Just after half a kilometer, the road was blocked with fencing of small trees which looked totally natural and not man-made.

As the car stopped there for hardly ten seconds, the part of the fence moved back and then to one side to make a way for the car to enter the other side of the fence.

Jiang Yuyan was sitting calmly in her car as if she was already expecting something secretive.

After crossing a distance of a few kilometers inside on a rough road, they reached one old mansion which was at the end of the road, and other than that old mansion, the entire place looked deserted with not a tinge of someone else's existence there. The mansion surrounded by tall compound walls and sat in the center of the land with tall trees.

Getting out of the car, Jiang Yuyan looked at the mansion, that looked like nobody had lived there for long.

“This way, Mrs. Lu,” San Zemin said, signaling her towards the iron gate.

Just then two men in the black suits came out of the mansion just to bow to their new boss and San Zemin.

Jiang Yuyan stepped forward as one man in the black suit led her way inside the mansion while San Zemin and the other man in the black suit walked behind her. Crossing the gate they all entered inside, the whole path and the mansion's yard was covered with the fallen leaves from the trees and seems like these people didn't like to clean the place.

The mansion was old and rusty, which was not painted or renovated for ages as if only ghosts lived there. As they reached the door of the mansion, the door had dust and looked like nobody even touched the handles or the knocker on the door as it was rusty to make one feel not to touch it.

Jiang Yuyan was just observing this ghost mansion silently, not saying a word, her eyes noting even a tiny thing around. As they stood up in front of the mansion's door, it opened automatically so that explained the rusty and dirty handle and knocker of the door. Seem like someone inside was monitoring everything outside of the mansion and controlling the things.

The moment they stepped inside, Jiang Yuyan noticed the whole place was so neat and clean, totally opposite to how it looked on the outside. Every corner was shining like it just got cleaned and the inside was brightened up to give one a fresh

feeling. The interior was mostly wooden, even the flooring was made of wood.

The huge living room was a circular one that had a set of wooden stairs exactly opposite to the door of the mansion which bifurcated on the first floor in opposite directions. It had only one huge urban style sofa in the middle with a wooden center table.

A few metal antics placed somewhere like the ancient time soldiers holding javelins and shields and a few more. Other than this, there was no decorative thing and the whole place was clean as a mirror.

In the living room, one old man in the black suit was standing with two men in the normal clothes standing behind him. Those two wore the similar clothes as if it was a uniform, a white shirt and normal black pants with the black cloth around their waist which showed that those two must be the servants which took care of the mansion and the old man in the black suit, seems like the butler.

“Welcome, Mrs. Lu,” the old man said as he knew who the woman was.

Jiang Yuyan nodded a little as a reply to his greeting.

“Mrs. Lu, he is the man who handles everything here, Bai Ye,” As San Zemin said it, the old man continued, “I am the butler here and these two are my men who help me to handle this place.”

Smiling lightly, San Zemin spoke, “He is not a simple man as he is very good with knives.”

“You are embarrassing me in front of our boss,” said the butler.

“Not really, as soon Mrs. Lu would want to see your skills,” San Zemin countered.

Jiang Yuyan’s sight was still observing everyone as she knew these were her people who would work for her and she needed to know them all really well.

“Mrs. Lu, let me take you to our main place,” saying, San Zemin took Jiang Yuyan towards the staircase but instead of climbing the staircase, San Zemin took her to the backside of it.

On the backside of the staircase, there was a secret door that was not visible to unknown persons. It looked like one with the wooden base of the staircase but when San Zemin put his palm at the one place of the wooden base, there was a movement and the one part of it shifted back like a door.

## 653 The VIP Room...

Once the door opened, there was a set of stairs going down and the path was brightened with lights on the walls. San Zemin entered inside while Jiang Yuyan followed him and two men walked behind her.

Crossing the stairs and reaching the plain surface, they stood up in front of one door, which opened automatically. As they entered inside, to Jiang Yuyan's surprise, it was not a normal place but the high-tech one.

Huge screens on the walls showing the views from the different places and the different maps which seem captured through satellite. It looked like the place which the detective agencies might use that worked under the government. Few men in the black suits were sitting in front of the screens while working. Everyone got up from their seats to greet the new boss.

"These are all our loyal people work for us and everyone is technically skilled," San Zemin said.

"Hmm!" Jiang Yuyan's eyes observing everything inside the room.

"From here we control everything," San Zemin informed.

"What exactly?" Jiang Yuyan asked, though she already guessed what it was.

"We keep eyes on the whole city and certain people that we need to. The ones who are trouble, you can control them. By sitting here, you can know almost everything about them, their whereabouts, and whom they are meeting," San Zemin explained.

"Can you see what they are doing or talking?" Jiang Yuyan questioned.

"Not from here but if there is something, we send the spies behind them so we can know what exactly going on," replied San Zemin.

“Hmm!”

San Zemin continued, “But it’s not that easy every time as the one whom we follow are difficult people and they too have a strong way of protecting themselves knowing someone must spy on them.”

“How many of them you monitor?” Jiang Yuyan asked curiously.

“Beyond one’s imagination. Lu Corporation is surrounded by enemies and you never know when one will come out. There are all from business, politics, high-rank government officials who can betray us anytime for money and power.”

“Your ex-boss, did he deal with everyone?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she never knew about this side of Lu Qiang though she was aware of being a powerful person, he must own something like this.

“After chairman Lu Jinhai’s accident, the boss had to do a few things which he never wanted to, just to protect everything. It was difficult for him in the start being one good man,” San Zemin answered that made Jiang Yuyan curious about her late husband.

“As in?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Few cruel things.”

San Zemin replied, not willing to explain much as it might scare the lady or she might think wrong about her late husband, but the next reply from her surprised him.

“It’s good that you know what cruel things are. Where is the place?” Jiang Yuyan asked that startled San Zemin.

Nodding lightly, San Zemin turned to leave the place just then one man in the black suit came to him, “Boss are you taking Mrs. Lu there?”

“Hmm!”

“But....”

“Do you wish to get a nice treat from your new boss? I won’t mind you to be the first one to try my skills on,” said Jiang

Yuyan, staring at the man with her intense gaze, while her voice carried sarcasm.

Her sight was intimidating for the man as he stepped back and bowed down, accepting his fault of doubting his new boss.

San Zemin could see there was something dark hidden inside this woman, though she was so calm out. She was taking everything slowly and calmly, but San Zemin was sure; it was her way to plan everything perfectly, exactly the way she wanted before capturing her prey.

He could see this woman even knew there must be a place in which she was more interested than this technologically advanced room, which was not the piece of cake for anyone to have it. Ignoring it, this woman straightaway wanted to visit that place as if it was really important for her.

San Zemin took Jiang Yuyan out from that hidden room where the butler was still present while the two servants were not around.

Looking at the butler, San Zemin said, “VIP room.”

Nodding, the butler led their way to the other side of the living room, which was perpendicular to the entrance and the staircase. Butler took out of the keys to open the huge double-framed door which led their way through one corridor. Closing that door back Butler took both San Zemin and Jiang Yuyan to the end of the corridor which had a door and behind there was a place that Jiang Yuyan wanted to visit the most.

The butler unlocked the door and took them inside. The room was not the normal one but the huge place which had chains with locks that were hanging on the walls. A wooden chair that looked like was for the person getting tortured and the different tools which looked like they had been used to torture the people. The whole room was clean and all the tools were kept in perfect order at their places.

Looking around the room, Jiang Yuyan said, “Seems like no VIP has visited here since long.”

San Zemin nodded, “No one came here after boss dealt with the few when he took control over Lu corporation. After that,

his name was enough to scare the people.”

“Let’s not keep this room silent for long,” Jiang Yuyan commented as if it was not a big deal and she would enjoy it.

“I guess this silence will break soon,” the butler commented back as he looked at Jiang Yuyan.

The butler was an old man in his late fifties. Average height with a maintained body, as if at this age too he must have been paying attention to it. His face had wrinkles around his eyes and stubble beard didn’t make him look less impressive. His grey hair was the sign of his experience in life and his eyes which darted at Jiang Yuyan looked like they could see through the person.



# 654 Got The Right Person As A Boss...

Jiang Yuyan walked around the room to take a proper look at everything as she instructed, “We will need a few more things.”

“More?” San Zemin asked as the room already had lots of things that could kill the person easily.

“Hmm!” Jiang Yuyan nodded.

“I will make sure to get everything that Mrs. Lu wishes for,” the butler assured before San Zemin could say anything.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan left the room while the two men, San Zemin, and the butler, followed her.

San Zemin didn't know if he was doing the right thing by introducing his boss's wife to this part of him as his boss loved his wife more than anything and always wished her to be happy. San Zemin was worried that Jiang Yuyan might not be able to have a peaceful life after this that his boss dreamed off and somewhere San Zemin wanted her to stay away from it.

The butler put his hand on San Zemin's shoulder as they followed Jiang Yuyan and said, “Don't worry. We got the right person as our new boss.”

San Zemin looked at the butler in surprise and the butler said again, “You can trust my judgement and experience about people's nature.”

Not saying much, San Zemin nodded and continued walking, immersed in his own thoughts.

As they reached the living room, San Zemin said, “Mrs. Lu, If you wish to visit the room that is meant for the boss, I can take you there.”

San Zemin was hesitant to ask this and wanted to get Jiang Yuyan's permission first as it was the room used by Lu Qiang

and taking Jiang Yuyan there would be the matter of emotions for her.

Jiang Yuyan nodded, "Where is it?"

"Upstairs," replying San Zemin was ready to get her there while the butler stayed back looking at the retreating back of this weak-looking young woman but the one who had much more to her personality, strong, determined, full of vengeance but badly wounded who was no less than a wounded tigress.

"Seems like few people will be in hell soon," the butler mumbled as to him, she looked like a calmness before the storm.

When they reached upstairs, the door exactly opposite the staircase was the one to Lu Qiang's room.

Entering the password, San Zemin unlocked the door and opened it. He waited for Jiang Yuyan to step inside while he stayed out and heard his lady boss, "Bring all the information that you collected till now."

Nodding and closing the door back, San Zemin left.

Jiang Yuyan looked around in the room and she could sense Lu Qiang's presence in everything there. It was more like his study room, which had a huge work table in the centre of the room near the wall exactly opposite to the entrance of the room.

The right side of the room had a couch in the pair of three plus one-seater combo out of which the single-seater chair looked like meant for Lu Qiang and it was placed facing the three-seater one with the wooden centre table in between. The left side of the room had a bed. This room was exactly what Lu Qiang preferred, similar to his room in the L Mansion.

Jiang Yuyan walked around the room from the worktable, couch to the bed and then to the wardrobe in the room. Curious, she opened the wardrobe and saw Lu Qiang's stuff. In that huge wardrobe, there were only three white shirts hung inside along with the three black jackets. The pants were folded and kept on one shelf.

Her hands trying to touch everything from ties, waist belts and every tiny thing there. Finally, she pulled out one shirt and just sniffed into it. That shirt still had Lu Qiang's scent in it, which she could never forget.

Jiang Yuyan's eyes turned teary with the memories and as she missed him. Though she acted all strong, there was nothing which could replace her pain of missing the one she lost and no one could fulfil that vacant place in her heart.

Just then there was a knock on the door. Keeping the shirt back, wiping her eyes and taking a deep breath to relax her tightened chest and choked throat, she instructed, "Come in."

As San Zemin opened the door, Jiang Yuyan went to sit on the chair opposite the three-seater couch.

San Zemin handed her over five files and said, "This is all."

"Hmm! Have a seat," As she instructed, San Zemin sat opposite to her on the couch while Jiang Yuyan started to go through the files one by one.

First one was the driver of the truck that hit Lu Qiang's car. "So he admitted it was only his fault, but it was not intentional," Jiang Yuyan commented.

"Yes, it would have been better if I had killed him that day only," said San Zemin.

"Then, why didn't you do it?" Jiang Yuyan counter questioned as she continued looking in the file.

"I thought to go through the legal way as the boss kept insisting on it until there was no need to go the other way," San Zemin answered.

"Hmm, your ex-boss sure was a good man but don't expect the same from me," Jiang Yuyan commented as she was still studying the file.

Before San Zemin could say a word, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "So this man had a huge amount of money transferred in his grandparent's accounts and claimed that they got by selling the ancestral land in the village."

"Yes."

“I see.” Saying Jiang, Yuyan picked up the other file. “A woman?” she exclaimed as the file had information about the woman in her thirties whose work was to provide women for the high society men.

“She is the one who is related to the driver and introduced him to others,” said San Zemin as Jiang Yuyan continued.

“This woman had an account in the European bank and it seems like those others had transferred the huge amount of money in it. With this amount she can feed her next ten generations,” said Jiang Yuyan as the one corner of her lips curved up to create a smirk showing she felt disgusted with that woman.

# 655 No Use Of Doubting Me...

“That account the woman had is on the fake ID where she keeps her money she earned from the illegal terms as providing the woman is just her faked. Through this, she is in contact with all the high profile people and she is not what she looks like. She is fearless with no weakness,” said San Zemin.

Listening to what San Zemin said, Jiang Yuyan commented again, “Weakness? Well, everyone has one.”

“She has no one in her life other than just one twelve-year-old daughter,” said San Zemin.

“Seems like we need to get the little sheep to cut the bigger one,” Jiang Yuyan commented as she put the file in her hand back and picked up the third one.

“No picture, no information!” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed to see the third file which was half done.

“It’s about the person who attached that device to the boss’s car to hack it. We are yet to get the information about it,” San Zemin replied.

“Jiang Yuyan looked at San Zemin with her one eyebrow raised in question so San Zemin said, “I will find it soon.”

Jiang Yuyan continued looking at San Zemin for a few more seconds as only she knew what she was observing but didn’t ask him anything while San Zemin felt nervous under her gaze that he couldn’t understand what it was for.

San Zemin was one strong man, mentally and physically. Also, he was the best in his work and Lu Qiang always thought highly of him, but he felt nervous under her gaze. Was it because his new boss was really intimidating or he was actually hiding something or he was taking her as a weak woman who knew nothing and her such behavior was unexpected for him, what was it exactly?

Putting down the third file, Jiang Yuyan picked up the fourth one. Her eyes narrowed at the picture of the person in it and she asked, "This person."

"He is the mastermind of everything," San Zemin replied.

"I need him here," Jiang Yuyan instructed.

"We will get him soon as it's not that easy. He had hired one of the best security agencies to protect himself and those are not easy to deal with. He must know after what he did, he might be in danger."

"Find a way," Jiang Yuyan ordered and San Zemin nodded.

When Jiang Yuyan picked up the fifth file, San Zemin looked a bit uncomfortable as if he didn't want him to see it.

Opening the file, Jiang Yuyan saw a picture of the man and read the name, "Victor Magnus."

She read further to know more about him and as she expected; the person was not from China. "USA citizen. What he had to do with Lu Qiang? Was there any business issues, or we have had offended him by chance?"

"There are always rivals in the business. He wants to spread his business in China and boss was the biggest obstacle," San Zemin replied.

"Hmm! Just for business. No personal grudge?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"I don't think so," San Zemin replied calmly but Jiang Yuyan noticed his behavior.

"Why are you uncomfortable since the moment I picked up this file? Are you scared of this Victor Magnus?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"He is one powerful man and one for those whom we can't reach easily. If we try something, things might end up the other way round," said San Zemin as he was warning her.

"Was your ex-boss scared of him?" asked Jiang Yuyan.

"No."

“Were you the same when your ex-boss wanted to deal with him?”

startled with her second question, San Zemin replied, “No.”

“Then why are you scared now? Is it that you don’t trust me?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

Giving out a deep sigh to get out what he wanted to say, San Zemin replied, “I am just worried about my boss’s wife whom he wanted to protect dearly.”

With this reply from San Zemin, Jiang Yuyan got to know he was just worried about her and said, “What can happen? At most I will die. Won’t it be good as I could see your boss up there, soon?” Jiang Yuyan asked as it was nothing serious for her and she didn’t care about her life.

San Zemin had nothing to say and stayed quiet.

Jiang Yuyan put Victor Magnus’s file back and picked up again the previous file. “If this person had the best security as you said, how come he got shot and ended up in the hospital?”

“The one who shot him must be someone he knew,” San Zemin replied.

“And..” Jiang Yuyan was not satisfied with this much answer as she was sure that San Zemin was hiding something from her.

“And I think that person is Mr. Lu Feng.” San Zemin finally said what was in his mind as he understood Jiang Yuyan had already caught him lying.

“That’s it?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she continued looking at San Zemin.

“Also, I think, they are the one who has Mr. Lu Feng.”

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan, kept the file back on the table and spoke, “San Zemin, if you can’t trust me and tell me everything clear, that means you didn’t accept me as your boss. If that’s the case, I shall free you from your job.”

These words from her startled him and he said, “My apology, Mrs. Lu.”

“We need to get Lu Feng out,” Jiang Yuyan instructed.

“My men are trying their best,” San Zemin replied.

“I don’t think I need to tell you that it’s not enough,” Jiang Yuyan countered. She sounded like the professional one who was used to handling such situations.

“I understood, Mrs. Lu,” saying San Zemin got up from the couch to leave the room just then Jiang Yuyan called him, “San Zemin!”

“Hmm!” he turned to look at her.

“I wish you to work with me the same way you worked with your ex-boss. I know you have so many doubts about me but there is no use even if you have them.”

Jiang Yuyan’s first line was like one genuine request while the next one was a mocking one as if saying you can’t understand me whatever you try.



# 656 Dog Hunting And Flesh Cutting...

Nodding, San Zemin left and he met the butler who was standing downstairs, waiting to get an order from his boss.

Seeing San Zemin coming downstairs with the puzzled face, the butler went to him, "You should stop doubting someone's capability until you check it. Accept her as your boss from your heart and not just for the sake of it. It would be easy for both of you."

"I have no doubt that she is strong but there are few things that she should not know and I know the boss never wanted her to know it," San Zemin countered.

"Hmm! Keep those few things aside and leave it on time. Just be faithful towards her, being the old San Zemin just like the way you were with our ex-boss," the butler suggested and San Zemin looked at him for a moment saying nothing.

"Or, is it something like you feel guilty about not being able to save our boss despite all your efforts and you feel guilty in front of Mrs. Lu?" The butler asked and San Zemin didn't know how to answer it.

The butler continued, "If you really feel guilty, then you should help her wholeheartedly without thinking about what will happen. Right now she needs help and you are the only one she can trust the most."

The old man and his words made sense to San Zemin. Nodding, San Zemin left to go to another room on the ground floor which was his study room.

Pulling out a file from one of the locked drawers, San Zemin came out with the file in his hands. When he went upstairs, the butler looked at him as he smiled and mumbled, "This stubborn man always tries to act tough when he should be emotional."

Getting back to Jiang Yuyan, San Zemin handed over her the file, “Boss, this is the file with Mr. Xi Cheng’s secret.”

Jiang Yuyan first stared at San Zemin for a moment as he suddenly called her a boss instead of Mrs. Lu.

Not saying a word, Jiang Yuyan accepted the file from him as if she was fine with him calling her boss, and the next moment San Zemin heard her, “No need to give him that much respect by adding Mister to his name. Just call him Xi Cheng.”

When San Zemin nodded, she mumbled to herself after giving out a deep sigh as she opened the file, “Respect and giving pain, can’t be together.”

San Zemin heard her but didn’t react and sat on the couch in front of Jiang Yuyan.

What Jiang Yuyan saw in the file, surprised her, “This...”

“It’s the truth,” San Zemin replied before Jiang Yuyan could ask him anything.

“So this was the reason for what he did with Lu Qiang,” Jiang Yuyan concluded.

“One reason,” San Zemin corrected her.

“What were the other reasons?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Xi family business.” San Zemin replied.

“That’s it?” Jiang Yuyan questioned.

“Hmm,” Nodding San Zemin explained Jiang Yuyan what was the condition in Xi family regarding business, the mistress and her son, how Xi Cheng played the game, how everything belonged to Nixxxie and what Xi Cheng’s plan was.”

“Seems like coveting what belongs to others, runs in the blood,” Jiang Yuyan commented and asked, “How much time are you going to take to search for Lu Feng?”

“I got a message that our men are close to finding him.” As San Zemin replied, his cellphone rang.

It was the call from his man and he informed San Zemin that they found the location where Lu Feng had been taken.

“Boss, they found him. I’ll get going and bring him back,” San Zemin assured, but it was not what Jiang Yuyan wanted to hear.

“You can’t go without your boss,” Jiang Yuyan ordered and it worried San Zemin.

“It can be dangerous there and.....”

“I want it to be dangerous,” Jiang Yuyan countered interrupting him and San Zemin questioned, “Boss, don’t you trust me?”

“In fact, you don’t trust your boss.” Saying, Jiang Yuyan got up from her chair and declared, “Today I will give you a chance to trust me.”

“What? But.....”

Before San Zemin could say anything, Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the room and went downstairs as San Zemin followed her.

This weak looking woman in a simple white T-shirt and blue jeans with her hair tied in a ponytail like a high school girl, what could she do when she will face the actual danger? So Many thoughts were running into San Zemin’s mind.

Though she was his boss, he was just ready to take just orders from her and not let her face the dangers. What would he do if something happened to her and how he could forgive himself when he was yet not out of the guilt of not being able to save his previous boss?

When Jiang Yuyan reached downstairs and San Zemin followed her in a hurry to stop her, Jiang Yuyan stopped in front of the butler who was standing near the staircase waiting to get an order from his boss or to check if his boss needed something.

“Boss.....” San Zemin called her but before more words could come out from his throat, Jiang Yuyan talked to the butler by ignoring San Zemin.

“Are you joining us for dog hunting and flesh cutting?” Jiang Yuyan asked the butler and he smiled just to say further, “I’ll

do what my boss wishes me to.”

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan said, “Well, I want you to prepare nice food for everyone and especially for San Zemin as he is getting a headache because of his new boss. He needs the energy to sustain his patience with me.”

Both could see Jiang Yuyan differed from how she was before. She was cold and aloof when she came there first but suddenly she was more active and was in a sarcastically funny mood as if the little girl got her favorite thing and she was happy about it.

Saying, Jiang Yuyan stepped to go towards the door of the mansion as she ordered San Zemin, “Hurry and get our car ready.”

San Zemin looked at the butler helplessly and mumbled, “I am not in a position to do babysitting.”

“That baby might shock you and babysit you all,” the butler replied as he smiled teasingly.

## 657 Stubborn Lady Boss...

When Jiang Yuyan reached the door of the mansion to go out, it was locked. The control of the door was in the hands of those who controlled the whole mansion and kept an eye everywhere. Jiang Yuyan knew she couldn't open it and looked at the camera at the side of the door.

“Do you guys wish to get hung up on the trees out of the mansion?”

As Jiang Yuyan said it, the next moment the door unlocked, and Jiang Yuyan stepped out. San Zemin who followed her reached the door, looked at the same camera, and cursed, “Idiots.”

San Zemin's two men who were looking at the view from the door on the screen in the security control room felt puzzled with the replies they got from their lady boss and later from the other boss.

“Did we just angered them?” the one asked.

“Seems like it,” the other replied.

“Then what do we supposed to do, open the door or not?”

“That I too don't know.”

When Jiang Yuyan stepped out, it was dark and the place had dim light coming from a few lamps, just enough for the person to see around clearly. When she arrived there, it was evening and the sun was just about to set so she never thought it would be this dark and silent outside to give goosebumps to the normal person.

She looked at the mansion. All the windows were dark and the bright light from inside could not make its way out of the window which made it look like a real ghost mansion and just with a small movement there, the normal person could get a cardiac arrest.

Jiang Yuyan waited for San Zemin and the moment he reached, she asked, "Where is the car?"

Jiang Yuyan saw there were no cars outside and the place was empty in the same way when she arrived there. She was expecting to see San Zemin's car as she remembered they parked the car just outside.

San Zemin still wanted to make her understand that it was dangerous. "Boss, listen to me first..."

Ignoring San Zemin, Jiang Yuyan again looked at the camera which was above the door of the mansion, up high but it was hidden that no one could think there was a camera and in the dark, it was next to impossible to see it but Jiang Yuyan's eyes didn't fail to notice it.

When Jiang Yuyan arrived there for the first time and was taking the note of all the things around silently, she didn't miss noticing anything outside of the mansion as well as the inside.

"I think you guys still didn't get me?" Said Jiang Yuyan looking at the camera as if she could see the two men sitting in front of the screen which showed the view captured by the cameras in the mansion.

Both the men felt she was staring in their eyes and they sensed the threatening warning from their lady boss. The next moment, the floor a few feet away from Jiang Yuyan moved. It was covered with dust and dried petals, making it look like any normal floor that no one could imagine there was something below it.

The part of the floor lifted up and parted on two sides just to get one car out. It came up slowly with one long wooden base lifting it up and the driver already sitting inside.

Jiang Yuyan's eyes brightened up seeing this special way of keeping the car in hiding, just like in movies. The wooden base leveled with the surface of the floor and the car was ready to go out.

Frowning, San Zemin looked at the camera where Jiang Yuyan saw earlier and the words left San Zemin's throat as he gritted

his teeth and tightened his fists, "I'll see you both once I am back."

The two sitting in front of the screen felt puzzled again.

"Have we again offended these two?" one asked.

"Seems like it. Be ready to get punishment later," the other replied.

Till then Jiang Yuyan sat in the car as the driver was already there. The driver was the one who drove Jiang Yuyan everywhere till now.

San Zemin looked back at the camera carefully to see if it was really that easy to know there was a camera. It was the brass, molded in the lion's face, which was attached above the door at a certain height.

The Two cameras were hidden behind two eyes of the lion which had a coating of the black color lense. San Zemin wondered how come Jiang Yuyan was so sure that there were cameras and she talked so confidently, not a tinge of doubt was on her face.

Soon four black cars arrived from somewhere from the backside of the mansion suddenly. San Zemin went to Jiang Yuyan's car and asked, "Boss, are you sure about this?"

Jiang Yuyan was looking at the four cars parked outside through the rear-view mirror and spoke, "I am, but if you are not sure, you can go back and rest."

San Zemin could see his lady boss was stubborn to her bones, and it was impossible to make her understand.

"In the middle," instructing just this much to the driver, San Zemin left to sit in on one of the four cars which were at the front in the row.

Each car had four men in it, neatly dressed up in their black suits which fitted perfectly on their muscular, strong, and well-built bodies and they looked as if they were going for some serious business meeting.

As the cars started and moved up, Jiang Yuyan's car moved in the middle so that two cars were in front and two cars were

behind her car. Jiang Yuyan understood the meaning of San Zemin's words - 'In the middle'.

Jiang Yuyan looked at her wristwatch and realized it was night and would be dinner time in the Lu Mansion. On the way, Jiang Yuyan pulled out the mobile from her tiny sling bag and dialed Lu Lian's contact number.



## 658 Listening To Her...

In Lu Mansion.. at dinner time...

Lu Lian was trying to convince Lu Lijun to go downstairs for dinner, but Lu Lijun was sitting stubbornly on the bed not paying attention to her.

“Lu Lijun, let’s go for dinner. Everyone is waiting for you,” pleaded Lu Lian, as Lu Lijun was not listening to her.

“Do you want me to bring your dinner to the room?” Lu Lian asked, but still, there was no reply.

Ning Jiahui entered the room seeing Lu Lijun didn’t come out of his room as she knew Lu Lian was about to bring him for dinner.

When Ning Jiahui entered the room, she saw the scene that she already expected and understood why Lu Lijun was not listening. Jiang Yuyan was not home and he must be waiting for her.

“Lu Lijun, Yuyan will be home soon. She must be busy somewhere. Let’s go for dinner,” Ning Jiahui instructed, though she knew there won’t be any use.

Both mother and daughter looked at each other helplessly while Lu Lijun was sitting in the bed with hands folded in front of his chest and his sight fixed at the mattress that showed he was upset with something and that something was Jiang Yuyan. She didn’t come back home though, it was dinner time and Lu Lijun always had his meal with her. Moreover, Jiang Yuyan said, she would be back soon, but she took time and he was angry.

Ning Jiahui signaled Lu Lian to call Jiang Yuyan, but before that Lu Lian’s cellphone rang. Seeing Jiang Yuyan’s number on the screen, Lu Lian gave out a sigh of relief and said, “Yuyan called.”

As expected of her, Lu Lijun immediately looked at Lu Lian and she received the call just to hear one instruction from

Jiang Yuyan.

“Pass the mobile to Lu Lijun.”

“Hmm!”

Lu Lian passed the mobile to Lu Lijun and he immediately took it from his sister though his expression was still cold his eyes were brightened with a call from Jiang Yuyan.

“Lu Lijun, are you listening to me?” Jiang Yuyan asked, but there was no reply.

Knowing Lu Lijun well, Jiang Yuyan knew he must be upset and won't talk to her, but he will listen to her. She continued, “I have very important work to do right now and it will take time. I am sorry I can't be with you for dinner, so for today just have it without me and I promise, we will have breakfast together.”

Lu Lijun listened but didn't reply. Getting out of the bed, he passed the cellphone back to Lu Lian and stepped towards the door. Jiang Yuyan was still on the call, waiting to get the update.

“He is going somewhere,” said Lu Lian, to inform Jiang Yuyan.

“Good. I will be back late, inform it to mother.”

Instructing Jiang Yuyan hung up the call while Lu Lian and Ning Jiahui followed Lu Lijun. Both were scared to think where Lu Lijun was going and what Jiang Yuyan said to him. Knowing how unpredictable Lu Lijun was and in a fear that he will do something in anger, both the ladies followed him. As they reached downstairs and thought Lu Lijun would do something for sure, to their surprise, Lu Lijun went to the dining room where all the other family members were waiting for him.

Sitting on Lu Qiang's chair, he waited for the servant to serve him, his sight moving to Jiang Yuyan's chair in between as he wanted her to be there.

The elder felt relieved to see him there, and the ladies following him were relieved too.

Lu Lian understood Jiang Yuyan knew where he was going and she was sure about it as Jiang Yuyan didn't feel worried when Lu Lian said he was going somewhere. It surprised Lu Lian that what kind of connection these two had to understand each other so well when they were together for just a year while his own mother and sister couldn't understand Lu Lijun.

---

In the car, Jiang Yuyan was relieved that Lu Lijun listened to her. Now she was waiting for the destination they were planning to go to. After more than half an hour, all the cars reached the deserted place that was once an old industrial area which had few small factories and out of which few were closed down and few that were still running used to stop work before the evening, making the entire place dead silent.

On the way, all the cars turned off their headlights as the road was visible in the light from the moon. Jiang Yuyan was observing what and how her people were working. All the cars stopped out of the huge compound wall of one closed factory and everyone stepped out of the car but Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan tried to open the door, but she couldn't open it. "What the hell!" she exclaimed and looked at the driver who stepped out of the car before her and already closed the door.

San Zemin immediately went to Jiang Yuyan's car and said, "I am sorry, boss, but I can't allow you to go inside as your safety is my responsibility."

Jiang Yuyan gave him a narrowed eyes look and sat calmly inside the car, not arguing with him. San Zemin felt relieved that his stubborn boss didn't create a fuss and didn't make it difficult for him.

Instructing the driver to be with her and protect her, San Zemin went inside that huge compound wall of the deserted factory along with his men. The factory building sat in the center of the huge premise was old and looked like it was closed for so many years.

The lights in the building were on and it brightened the whole premise as if someone was still using it, though it was not for

the factory work. Everyone pulled out the guns and went towards the building as Saz Zemin instructed them to divide into groups and approach the building from different sides.

## 659 Old Friend...

San Zemin and his men entered inside the huge place covered with the metal roof that was supported with huge iron beams along with a complicated structure of multiple iron rods attached to the roof. The place was empty with a long passage, but no one was there. It had a smell of rusted iron and dampness which came from the walls.

Being careful with guns in the hands, they were searching for the enemies just then they heard a voice.

“My old friend, San Zemin, welcome.”

It startled them as the person took San Zemin’s name, directly calling him a friend, but at the same time it alerted them and everyone pointed their guns in the voice’s direction.

A tall man in a black suit with a well-built body appeared in front of them. Everyone pointed their guns at him but he was calm, having a smile on his face. He looked the same age as San Zemin, had a well-groomed beard on his long and impressive face, his black eyes darted at San Zemin as his lips carried a teasing smile.

With his eyes wide open in surprise, San Zemin continued looking at the man with his gun still pointing towards the man.

“Glad to see my friend after so long but the situation seems wrong, how sad!” said the man as he stood in the center of the huge place, few meters away from the men pointing guns towards him.

“Da Niu,” San Zemin mumbled as he was still surprised to see the man.

“Oh, so you finally recognized me, my friend,” the man said as he chuckled.

Not in the mood to reminisce the old days, San Zemin declared, “I am not your friend. Just give me the person back and end this here.”

“Straight to the business, huh? I thought we could have some talk with the beer just like in our old days, what say?”

Hearing him, San Zemin looked angry as if he heard something hurting and asked, “Getting a bullet straight into your brain, how about it?”

Giving out a soft chuckle, the man commented, “Tsk, anger! Seems like you still didn’t understand from your past mistakes. Let me tell you, this anger of yours is what put you in this situation, ex-detective San Zemin. How easy was it to fool you!”

“Stop the bullshit as I will give you one last chance. Bring the person, or will you do it after some drama of fighting and shooting?” asked San Zemin as he was not willing to stand this person for long.

“Seems like you still underestimate me like before, San Zemin,” As the man named Da Niu said it, the men with guns surrounded the San Zemin and his men.

With San Zemin’s gun pointed towards Da Nui, his other men turned to face Da Nui’s men, and both sides men were standing pointing guns each other.

Laughing at the situation where Da Nui had more number of men which surrounded San Zemin and his men, Da Nui continued, “You are always in so hurry to not prepare yourself well, San Zemin. What did you think? You will come here with your men and I will welcome you and give you the thing you want?”

San Zemin was not scared with this as it was not something new for him and countered while pointing his gun towards the man, “What did you think, I will just come here to get killed in the hand of one jerk? Sad to see you have only these many men prepared to kill me, seems like you underestimate my capability after so many years.”

Da Nui laughed seeing the confidence of San Zemin and asked, “And what did you think, with just these many men were you going to win world war?”

As the man said it, everyone heard one sweet voice that surprised them.

“I was thinking the same.”

The men on the enemy’s side looked at the source of the voice while San Zemin closed his eyes for a moment annoyingly as he recognized the voice and mumbled, “Not now.”

That was Jiang Yuyan, who was standing at the entrance of the place and heard the whole conversation.

---

When San Zemin and his men left to search for the place, Jiang Yuyan waited for few minutes and knocked on the window of the car from inside. The driver who was guarding her looked at the window questioningly and she said, “I need to pee.”

The driver couldn’t hear her but only saw her in the dim light inside the car. He pulled the windshield down with the controller in his hands but just to leave a two inches gap.

“I need to pee,” said Jiang Yuyan with painful and innocent expressions on her face. Though the driver had been ordered to keep her locked inside the car just for her own safety, the man couldn’t ignore the fact that she was his boss and his ex-boss’s wife whom he respected even after his death.

“It will be over soon. Hold it for some time, boss,” the driver suggested.

“I will die soon with this. I can’t hold it for long. Please open the door,” Jiang Yuyan pleaded, her eyes turned teary that made the man believe her and said, “Okay but after that, you will get back into the car, boss.”

“I promise. After finishing my work, I will get back into the car. Now open it,” Jiang Yuyan assured him.

The driver unlocked the car, and Jiang Yuyan stepped out of it. Closing back the door of the car, Jiang Yuyan stepped towards the gate of the factory compound and the man followed her to stop her, “Boss you can’t go there.”

“Do you want me to pee in front of you?” Jiang Yuyan asked, straight looking into his eyes.

The driver felt embarrassed and said, “N-no boss, but...”

“I need a bathroom. It’s a huge place and there must be a bathroom inside and as I promised, I will be back in the car once I finish my work,” Jiang Yuyan declared.



# 660 What The Kid Is Doing Here?

Suddenly the driver felt as if his boss tricked him and it was his mistake to let her out. Caring more about her safety, the driver decided to stop her even if it is by force. Walking fast, he stood up in front of Jiang Yuyan just to block her way. “I can’t let you go there, boss. It’s dangerous.”

Pinching the bridge of her nose and giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan said coldly, “I know what I am doing so get out of my way.”

The driver knew the woman in front of him was not someone whom he could put on his shoulders and lock inside the car by stuffing her forcefully, so he decided to try another way- The emotional blackmail.

“We lost our previous boss and we don’t want to lose you too. Our boss meant a lot to us. Boss can kill this disobeying man once this is over but for now, I can’t let you be in danger.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan didn’t know how to deal with this man. If he had forced her, she would have let him taste the ground with few moves but this emotional blackmailing was the most difficult thing to deal with.

“Seems like your boss has trained you in this department too,” Jiang Yuyan commented.

The driver didn’t reply and instead stood firmly on his place to block her path, his expression as if he was pleading her.

“Do you know kung fu?” Jiang Yuyan asked out of the blue just to surprise the driver.

“I do,” the driver replied.

“I will try three moves on you and if you cannot dodge then all, you will let me go,” Jiang Yuyan offered him.

The driver felt it must be his boss's other trick. He literally underestimated Jiang Yuyan and offered another option.

"If you dodge just one move from me, I will let the boss go," the driver said as he thought, he will just go soft on her to not let her hurt.

Jinag Yuyan agreed, "Okay."

The driver and Jiang Yuyan were ready to solve their problem while San Zemin's men were smoothly moving ahead inside with no disturbances.

The driver, who was not just any ordinary driver but San Zemin's one of the trained men, was ready for his first attack. By jumping on his feet a few times to get ready, he was ready to hit. His move was just to scare Jiang Yuyan, who was standing at her place calmly for the man to hit her.

The man's left fist moved to hit her as his body moved to the right, but Jiang Yuyan's hand blocked it with her right four-arm stretched out just like the professional fighter. Her left hand was folded on her back as if it was like a piece of cake for her to deal with it just with her one arm.

It surprised the driver, and he threw the jab with his right hand and Jiang Yuyan blocked it single-handedly too by moving her right forearm left and right, swiftly using the blocking moves. Thinking it must be just a coincidence, the driver decided to use a bit of strength and more jabs.

He tried five to six jabs with his both hands, each alternately, but Jiang Yuyan blocked it with just one hand again. The driver stopped and looked at her in surprise. "This tiny woman in front of him, how can she do it? Has she learned kung fu?" thought the man.

"If you are not satisfied with this, we can go full-on. Use all your strength and this time if I win, you have to let me go," said Jiang Yuyan," Jiang Yuyan cleared it out, and the man accepted it.

These two were unaware that someone was watching these two from a distance secretly.

Accepting, the driver attacked his boss with the full force as he didn't want her to go into the dangerous place even though he had to hurt her a little and thought he would get ready to die in her hands later.

Jiang Yuyan used her both hands, the driver was throwing one after one strong jab while Jiang Yuyan was blocking them using her both hands with inner and outer blocks. They didn't stop, and it continued for some time as the driver was not ready to give up.

Finally, Jiang Yuyan thought to end it. She caught his one hand and swiftly twisted it on his backside to stand behind him. Before he could understand, Jiang Yuyan kicked lightly on the back of his knees with her foot that made him sit on the floor, and later she hit on his neck with her hand. The next moment the driver fell on the ground.

"I don't wish to lose my energy with this child fight. You will be fine soon. The help is already here." Saying Jiang Yuyan ran towards the factory and the driver couldn't help but keep looking at her helplessly while lying on the ground but he couldn't understand her last words- help is already here.

When Jiang went away, someone came to the driver, and it surprised him.

—

Inside the huge place in the factory....

Jiang Yuyan was standing at the entrance after saying her line and capturing everyone's attention. She stepped inside, and the one man from the enemy pointed his gun at her, too. Not having a tinge of fear, Jiang Yuyan continued stepping ahead while the man called Da Nui signaled his men to let her come ahead.

"What is the kid doing at such a dangerous place?" Da Nui commented in amusement as to him, Jiang Yuyan looked like any young girl who was over excited to see such conditions as in the movies, not knowing how dangerous it was.

"I wish to take part in what you all are doing," Jiang Yuyan replied and stopped at where her men were standing.

“I don’t like kids to get harmed in the fight between adults. I am giving you a chance to leave this place. Go back home.” Da Nui instructed.

“What if I don’t wish to?” Jiang Yuyan asked,

## 661 I Am The Boss...

Hearing Jiang Yuyan, Da Nui gave out a deep sigh and asked, "Then, do you wish to die, kid?"

San Zemin's men looked at San Zemin to know what to do and San Zemin signaled them to stay quiet as he didn't want Da Nui to know she was their boss or it would be dangerous for her. He prayed that his boss would listen to the threat given by Da Nui and leave the place, but happened opposite.

"I want to know if you all get killed here, will there be any trouble with the police or will your boss bury or dump your bodies somewhere to hide it?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

It surprised the man called Da Nui, but he thought the girl was eager to know what happens after such fights and few people die. Now he was sure that she was just one curious and harmful girl as any professional from their field would know about this and he asked, "Why do you want to know, kid?"

"Because I don't like to deal with the police," Jiang Yuyan replied.

"Haha. You scared me, kid. See, here we are doing some serious business so I am not in a mood to play with you. So....."

"I am here for the business too as I am the boss of the opposite side," Jiang Yuyan interrupted Da Nui.

"Boss? You?"

Exclaiming in surprise, Da Nui looked at San Zemin teasingly, "Is this the truth, San Zemin? Are your days so bad that you have one young girl as your boss? Things like these are just good to see and play with them." Da Nui laughed as he said it.

His words angered San Zemin, and he warned, "Be careful your words, Da Nui. It might make me give you a painful death instead of an easy one."

“Oh, looks like this woman is special for you.” As Da Nui said it, he received an angry gaze from San Zemin so he said again, “Sorry wrong words. She is your boss, so it’s normal to respect her,” Da Nui commented.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t react to any of Da Nui words while San Zemin cursed himself in his mind for everything and was angry with his boss for acting childish in such a serious condition when everyone was pointing guns at each other. ‘It would have been better if I had locked her in the mansion. Here we are all about to die and she is in a mood to play,’ thought San Zemin.

Ignoring Da Nui, San Zemin asked, “Da Nui, just talk about the business first. Are you going to continue like this or will you finish it faster?”

“I am not in a hurry, first let me get to know your boss. I want to check if this kid, I mean your boss can actually do something.”

Jiang Yuyan was still calm while San Zemin was frowning inside as he suggested, “Why don’t you check my ability instead, to see if I am the same as in the past?”

Making an offer, San Zemin stepped ahead and the Da Nui warned, “Take one more step ahead and my sniper will shoot this kid.”

“Sniper? I see none.” Jiang Yuyan, who was standing calmly till now, spoke suddenly.

Thinking the little girl must be curious to know about the sniper, Da Nui pointed with the gun in his hand to one place at a height where one man with a long-distance gun positioned behind the critical structure of poles which supported the roof. There was a window on the wall at the highest point and only the half body of the sniper was visible with his long gun.

“See, that’s what we call a sniper,” said Da Nui, thinking to make a girl happy.

“Just one?” Jiang Yuyan asked as if it disappointed her.

“You are one curious young girl, huh? There is one more sniper,” said Da Nui while signaling towards another wall

apposite to the previous sniper.

“Just two?” Jiang Yuyan had the same reaction before.

It annoyed Da Nui and he said, “To deal with you all, these two are enough.”

San Zemin was annoyed with Jiang Yuyan’s sudden presence but while talking to her, Da Nui himself revealed the location of his snipers and that made things easy for San Zemin and his men so he kept quiet and thought to let them continue the talk.

For others, Jiang Yuyan looked like acting childish, but no one paid attention that every line she said was serious and she was getting the information from the man as he underestimated her already.

“Boss, just get out from here. We can handle this,” said San Zemin with an indistinct voice as his mouth was closed and just his lips moved so that others wouldn’t hear it.

“Don’t worry, I know what I am doing and your next plan is ready too,” said Jiang Yuyan in an indistinct voice that surprised San Zemin as he thought, ‘how did she know his next plan for the backup’.

Seeing these two murmuring to each other, Da Nui spoke, “I want to check what your boss can do, San Zemin.” moving his sight from San Zemin to Jiang Yuyan, he asked, “I hope the lady here won’t mind.”

“I won’t,” said Jiang, and San Zemin shouted loudly in his mind, ‘No, boss’ but couldn’t say it loudly. He knew if he stopped his boss, it will provoke Da Nui to make his boss do something rash that might put her in danger. So, he waited for what Da Nui wanted to say.

Da Nui looked around to check all the men of San Zemin and said while pointing towards one man, “You.”

San Zemin’s man gave him a look to know what this man wanted.

“Yes, you. The ugliest one among all. Come here to help your boss.”

Da Nui's words didn't affect the man as the insulting talk was the normal thing. The man looked at his lady boss- Jiang Yuyan but she was standing calmly as nothing mattered to her.

=====

More chapters would be there as it's sunday. keep voting as today is the reset and we have to get back into top 5.



## 662 Shot The Ugliest One...

San Zemin's man stepped ahead with his gun still pointing towards Da Nui while Da Hui's one-man followed him with his gun pointed towards San Zemin's man.

As the man reached Jiang Yuyan, Da Nui instructed, "Keep your gun in your pocket, as I will not kill you. It's just a minor game to entertain the kid, I mean your boss."

The man didn't listen and Da Nui continued, "Give your gun to your boss and stand here beside me."

The man looked at Jiang Yuyan, and Jiang Yuyan put her hand forward to get the gun from him.

San Zemin understood what Da Nui planned and said in an indistinct voice to Jiang Yuyan, "You should not use a gun if you don't know how to. It's a real gun."

"Really? Then let me try it at least once," Jiang Yuyan replied sarcastically as the man put his gun in her hand and she observed it.

San Zemin thought if his lady boss was not here, he would have executed his second plan till now and finished it all but this woman ruined his plan and put his man's life in danger. For the moment, he regretted having Jiang Yuyan as his boss and thought why did he even agree to take her as his boss. He could have just brushed her off and handled everything on his own.

Da Nui asked San Zemin's man to stand beside him and the man listened because he had no option as his lady boss wanted him to listen to the enemy.

The man stepped ahead and stood beside Da Nui, facing Yuyan and his own men. Da Nui's man who followed San Zemin's man, pointing his gun to him, stood behind him so that he wouldn't pull out any stunt.

There was a distance of a few meters between Jiang Yuyan and Da Nui as she waited for Da Nui to say something.

“Is that gun heavy, kid?” Da Nui asked smiling teasingly.

“Hmm! A little,” Replied Jiang Yuyan, and it made Da Nui feel like teasing her more as if she was the thing of amusement for him.

The problem was not Jiang Yuyan looking younger as there were so many professional girls out there who were young, but if this girl was professional, she wouldn't be so careless to come here like this with no preparation. Not to forget her clothes like a highschool girl and hair tied in a cute ponytail. Which professional person will wear this simple white T-shirt and jeans with sneakers on her feet like she was going to the amusement park with her parents?

“I want you to shoot this ugly man exactly in the center of his forehead. If you do this, I'll let you go without harming you even though you are my enemy,” Da Nui offered, thinking the girl in front of him was totally harmless.

Jiang Yuyan was observing the gun in her hand when Da Nui was speaking and she looked around the room as if her eyes were searching for something. When she got the confirmation of what she was searching for, she looked at the men standing in front of her.

San Zemin was observing Jiang Yuyan and followed her sight too and understood what she was waiting for as he thought, ‘So, she is not that clueless. Not bad,’ but he didn't expect something unexpected and shocking would happen the next moment.

“Bang!!!”

There was a sound of the gunshot and the bullet that left the gun straight made its way through the center of the man's forehead. It shocked everyone as their sight's followed from the man lying dead on the ground and then towards Jiang Yuyan who was calm after shooting as if is she did nothing.

“Are you serious?”

Da Niu exclaimed as the head that got shot belonged to Da Nui's man who was standing to one side pointing his gun at

San Zemin's man, who was ready to die in his lady boss's hands.

"I shot the ugliest one," Jiang Yuyan commented as if she didn't know what she did and how it would affect her enemy.

Da Nui called Jiang Yuyan's man ugly, so how could she tolerate it. As she said it, the man standing in front of her looked at his lady boss with respect while others thought if she shot the man by mistake as she couldn't make a perfect shot at the target man.

The atmosphere became tense. Jiang Yuyan and San Zemin were ready with his men as they got the signal, while Da Nui was in a shock to see how this woman took the perfect shot. In anger, he was about to point his gun to Jiang Yuyan but suddenly there was a sound of so many bullets at the same moment that before Da Nui could understand all his men were lying dead on the ground. His hand that was about to point a gun at Jiang Yuyan was injured and his gun dropped on the ground.

What surprised San Zemin was the two snipers who were positioned at the two windows above opposite to each other were shot by his lady boss. San Zemin recalled the scene again, whatever happened a second ago.

They were ready as their backup plan team was there. San Zemin's target was Da Nui and his men's targets were fixed when they received the secret signal from San Zemin which he made with his finger that only his men could understand while others were targeted by his backup team.

When San Zemin thought the backup force would take care of the two snipers, Jiang Yuyan took out another gun from her back which was tucked in her jeans and covered by her white T-shirt. Da Nui was careless in not checking her, thinking she was a harmless girl.

It was so swift that she pointed those guns in two directions and fired it without the second delay and trusted that San Zemin and the backup team would take care of everything.

It left everyone shocked but it was not the time to talk about it. If there was even a second mismatch in the actions of San Zemin's men, the backup team, and Jiang Yuyan, then few of them would have died at least but it didn't happen.

---

3rd chapter of the day.. 4th chapter would be there but depends on the rank and votes. Today is the reset for the votes so don't forget to vote all your PS...

## 663 Eager To Chop Fingers and Pull Out Teeth...

The backup team entered inside and San Zemin went to Da Nui, pointing his gun towards him. Da Nui was in pain as the bullet hit him in the wrist and before he could do anything he was captured by San Zemin's men.

"Who is this woman?" Da Nui asked.

Though San Zemin was still doubtful about Jiang Yuyan, he felt proud of what she did and how it surprised Da Nui.

"Haven't you heard before what she said or your brain really stopped working properly?"

Da Nui frowned on not getting an answer so San Zemin finally answered to let him know the person, "The one you were calling kid, again and again, she is my previous boss's wife."

It shocked Da Nui, "How can this be?"

Da Nui had seen Jiang Yuyan through the news where she was with Lu Qiang in a royal ladylike form and here she was like a wild cat that he couldn't recognize her. Never ever he thought after Lu Qiang, this royal but delicate-looking youthful woman will take his place.

Da Nui looked at Jiang Yuyan in surprise while not paying attention to them, Jiang Yuyan was observing the two guns in her hands, as she mumbled, "Not bad."

"Where is our person?" San Zemin asked.

"I don't know as they took him somewhere else and I doubt you will get him," Da Nui replied.

"You didn't answer me yet, uncle," said Jiang Yuyan as she was still holding the guns, positioning it at the different angles with her one eye close to check how to shoot from different sides.

Everyone looked at her to know who she was talking to and what answer she was asking for.

Not getting a reply soon, Jiang Yuyan gave out a deep sigh and looked at Da Nui, “You are the one to call me a kid so is it wrong to call you an uncle?”

No one knew how to react to her such behavior. When they were trying to get the information from Da Hui about Lu Feng, she was still in a mood to play. ‘Boss, can you be a bit serious?’ thought the men while Da Nui was regretting his previous decision to underestimate her.

“Okay, let me repeat it again, just for the sake of you, uncle. After killing you, will the police deal with your body or will your boss dump it somewhere?”

Not just Da Nui, but it stunned San Zemin and his men too, hearing the question again. They initially thought she was just acting, but now all were sure that she was asking it seriously.

“San Zemin, who is she really?” Da Nui asked annoyingly.

Because of this, in such a serious situation too, San Zemin and his men had a smile on their lips. Their boss beat the enemies not only with her skill but also annoyed the enemy with her words.

Finally, San Zemin cleared the curiosity of his boss, “Police will come and take these bodies from here. As it’s nothing new for them and they don’t want to meddle in such matters, they will make a fake report declaring they couldn’t find anything on investigation and close the case.”

“I see, so the police and the laws are still useless,” commented Jiang Yuyan.

She had hated police and the law since the incident in the past. The police did nothing to punish the culprit, so she had to do the justice on her own and when she did it, the police didn’t take any actions against her even though she was wrong to harm the person in such a bad way.

Going closer to San Zemin and Da Nui, Jiang Yuyan observed Da Nui carefully from head to toe.

“San Zemin, how about taking him as my first guest in the VIP room?” asked Jiang Yuyan as her evil eyes were still observing Da Nui.

“V-VIP room?” Da Nui asked, as what Jiang Yuyan said didn’t sound right to him.

“Nothing much. I am just eager to chop a few fingers and pull out a few teeth,” Jiang Yuyan replied, looking at Da Nui as if he was her prey.

Jiang Yuyan’s words and her sight scared him as he knew in this field people often tortured others to get what they want but never ever in his dreams Da Nui thought the day would come for him too.

“They took him to the farmhouse that the boss owns, which is five kilometers from here.” Da Nui spurted out as he could see Jiang Yuyan’s intentions were not right.

San Zemin pitied this man whom he once knew in the past while Jiang Yuyan kept quiet to let San Zemin handle the things as she didn’t know what place Da Nui was talking about.

San Zemin pulled out the cellphone from Da Nui’s jacket and gave it to him as he ordered. “Dialled the number.”

Understanding the meaning, Da Nui did what San Zemin asked.

The familiar figures entered inside. That was the butler and his two men who handled the mansion with him. This time those two were in the suits instead of the uniform of the servants. They were carrying long-range guns the ones snipes used. This surprised Jiang Yuyan.

“Once again you did well, Bai Ye,” San Zemin commented as he gave Da Nui to his men to handle while the people in the high-tech room in the mansion were busy tracing the number that Da Nui dialed in his cellphone to get the location of the farmhouse.

“How can I not when our boss ordered me to prepare a proper meal for you as she might trouble you?” replied the butler.

San Zemin remembered Jiang Yuyan's last words with the butler when she asked him to prepare the proper meal for everyone, and especially San Zemin as he might run out of patience with his new boss. San Zemin understood the meaning of her words as she indirectly told the butler she would do something that San Zemin might not like and she might ruin his plan.

Just then San Zemin's man came to him holding the tablet in his hands, "They found the location."

"Wind up everything here and let's go," San Zemin instructed.

"Wait!"



## 664 Scary Boss...

“Wait!”

Everyone heard Jiang Yuyan and they stopped. She looked at Da Nui who was being taken away by San Zemin’s men and asked coldly, “Were you involved in my husband’s death plan?”

“I just knew what they were planning and....”

“Is he of any use to us?” Jiang Yuyan asked, moving her sight to San Zemin as she interrupted Da Nui without letting him finish his line.

“No?” San replied, just to get one more shock the next moment.

“Bang!!!”

Everyone looked at the hole that bullet made in the center of Da Nui’s forehead.

San Zemin looked at Jiang Yuyan in disbelief while Jiang Yuyan dropped the two guns in her hands on the floor like garbage just to look back at San Zemin, “Didn’t you wish to do the same a while ago?”

Shocked, San Zemin once again recalled what he said to Da Nui - Getting a bullet straight into your brain, how about it?

San Zemin could only look at his boss who was leaving the place as the butler and his two men followed her while he picked up two guns from the ground that Jiang Yuyan dropped. San Zemin had so many questions in his mind about his new boss. Though he already knew a few things about her, there was more to her which even his ex-boss might not aware of.

When they all reached outside, the driver whom Jiang Yuyan had a fight with was standing near the car. He didn’t look in Jiang Yuyan’s eyes as he was guilty of disobeying his boss and getting into her way.

“I hope your neck is not hurting,” Jiang Yuyan asked and the driver knelt down in front of her.

“Boss can punish me for my mistake,” the driver said.

“Do you really think it was your mistake?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“I don’t because I was worried about my boss’s safety,” the driver replied.

“Hmm! No mistake, No punishment. Start the car, we need to go somewhere,” Jiang Yuyan ordered.

Nodding, the driver got up and stepped towards the car just then he heard.

“Wait!”

Everyone around felt worried for the driver as the last time when Jiang Yuyan said this word, the bullet made its way through Da Nui’s head. As the driver was at fault too for locking the boss inside the car, everyone thought it was his life’s last moment.

The man who was holding Jiang Yuyan’s guns passed by San Zemin to him shifted the two steps back as he thought Jiang Yuyan would ask him the guns and the same happened.

“Where are the guns?” Jiang Yuyan ordered as she knew someone must have picked it up from where she dropped them.

The man stepped forward and handed her over the guns. San Zemin too felt worried about the driver and stepped forward to stop Jiang Yuyan, but just then she spoke, “Which one is his gun. I need to give him back.”

When the driver and Jiang Yuyan were fighting, after making him taste the ground, Jiang Yuyan grabbed his gun and ran away towards the factory building.

To Jiang Yuyan, both the guns looked the same. Hearing her, others left out a deep sigh of relief. The man gave her the driver’s gun, “This one.”

Getting the gun, Jiang Yuyan threw the gun at the driver, which he caught, but her next words were threatening.

“Try to stop me next time and I will hang you in the VIP room,” warned Jiang Yuyan, and the driver just nodded with his head lowered down.

This bitter-sweet woman was becoming confusing for others as they couldn't predict what was going on in her mind and what she would do the next moment. One moment she talked sweetly while the next moment she could kill you. They all thought to be careful with their new boss as she was scary.

The butler looked at San Zemin, giving him a look as if asking- Do you trust my judgment now?

San Zemin nodded a little as if saying- yes.

“Boss, from here we will handle, you can rest,” San Zemin offered just to get a bitter reply from his boss.

“Again you are forgetting who is the boss.”

San Zemin didn't argue with his boss and she continued, “Locking me in the car, huh?”

San Zemin felt like putting his feet on the thorn when everything was going smoothly as he heard his boss warning him.

“Try to do it again and I won't hesitate to hang you in the VIP room along with the driver.”

San Zemin nodded slightly with his head bowed down and Jiang Yuyan turned to sit in the car.

San Zemin's men were surprised how his boss was being so obedient in front of the new boss when other times he always kept scolding his men to keep them strictly.

Sensing the laughing gazes from his men, San Zemin looked at his men and pulled out his gun. Scared, everyone ran towards the car to sit inside in a hurry before their boss would kill them.

---

Flashback-

When Jiang Yuyan left the secret mansion in the car along with San Zemin and his men, she noticed the light coming

from the one side of the mansion. In the rear-view mirror, she noticed it was from the headlights of the cars ready to go out, but those cars didn't follow them.

When they touched the highway, she again noticed the cars were following them but the distance was too long and after some time those cars disappeared from her sight but she guessed that those belonged to her as they came out from the mansion.

When she was fighting with the driver, she saw few people coming towards them in the dark while walking faster and she knew it was her men as everyone had the one small badge attached at the collar that was the sign of where they belonged and it shined brightly even in the dark. She had read about it in the information Lu Qiang stored in the file.

## 665 Finally, Found Him...

Jiang Yuyan left the driver there knowing these people will take care of him but noticed the movement at two places in the factory building. She stopped in the dark as they were the snipers who were waiting to sense any movement outside of the building but as their work of allowing San Zemin and his men to go inside the place was done, they were relaxing not expecting to get any other enemy.

To Jiang Yuyan's surprise, both the snipers were shot down by her men who came later and cleared her way. The snipers were butler's two servants who came there along with the butler and a few more men. Jiang Yuyan went ahead while the butler stood up in front of the driver.

"You are lucky to get beaten up by the boss," the butler commented while the driver who almost felt paralyzed for a few moments, tried to get up as he said, "Do you wish to be the lucky one, too? But let me tell you, she is not what she looks. She is skilled."

The butler laughed at it and said, "She sure is."

Getting the driver up and asking him to wait near the car, the butler went ahead with all the men with him. As the message sent by San Zemin, he already had an idea of where to place his men. He surrounded the entire place with his men as planned by him and San Zemin, ready to shoot anytime when needed. Everyone witnessed what their new boss did in front of the enemies and they felt proud of her.

---

Along with her men, Jiang Yuyan reached the said farmhouse where Lu Feng was being taken. The cars with their headlights off stopped at a certain distance from the farmhouse. San Zemin instructed his men to look around first to check the place and he went to Jiang Yuyan to stop her before she could pull out any stunt.

San Zemin went to instruct Jiang Yuyan, “Boss, wait here for a while till we make sure everything is safe”

As Jiang Yuyan gave him a narrowed eyes look, San Zemin said, “I am not doubting the boss’s capability, but this is the protocol. Let me check first and later you can come out.”

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan kept quiet in the car. This time she was sure that he wouldn’t dare to lock her in the car or she already had her VIP room plan ready for him.

Going ahead, San Zemin and his men made sure everything was clear. It was easy for San Zemin as he was getting the information about the number of people present inside through the high-tech room team as he was connected to them through the microphone. The same help he got when he went to the old factory.

San Zemin was surprised when they said it showed the presence of just three people inside the farmhouse while he got the information of so many men present inside the factory building.

“It’s clear.” As San Zemin said it after entering the gate, Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the car as she grabbed one man’s gun who was standing beside San Zemin and stepped ahead of everyone.

Before San Zemin could stop Jiang Yuyan, he heard her saying, “They dared touch my family,” as she removed and put back the magazine inside the gun after checking the bullet and slid the top ready to shoot it soon.

Two men in the servant’s clothes stepped out of the farmhouse and the moment they saw Jiang Yuyan holding the gun, they raised their hands up in a defeat and Jiang Yuyan had to stop pulling the trigger.

“Mood spoiler,” she commented annoyingly as she was expecting to make a hole in a few more brains.

San Zemin stood beside her and said, “I think they gave up so we need not do much.”

“I am not blind,” saying Jiang Yuyan went to the men and asked, “Where is he?”

The men were intimidated by the way Jiang Yuyan spoke and one of them replied, “I-Inside the room at the left side of the living room.”

“If I see even a small scratch on him, consider yourself a few feet under the ground,” warning Jiang Yuyan left to go inside as San Zemin followed her.

When they reached the living room, Jiang Yuyan ran towards the single door on the left side of the room. When she opened the door, she saw Lu Feng lying on the bed unconscious while his right hand was tied to the bed with the steel handcuffs. His white shirt which was messed up had stains of blood on it, his face looked pale and lifeless.

Seeing him like this, Jiang Yuyan felt her heart sink and the anger inside her rose. San Zemin went to check Lu Feng as the butler followed him too. The butler checked Lu Feng’s pulse and concluded, “they have drugged him.”

“Is he in danger?” Jiang Yuyan asked worriedly.

“No, we just have to flush the drugs out from his body. First, get him back home,” the butler replied.

San Zemin unlocked the handcuff as the key was kept on the bedside table. The men lifted Lu Feng to get him out just then they heard their boss, “In my car.”

Understanding the meaning, the men kept Lu Feng in Jiang Yuyan’s car as she sat beside him. Jiang Yuyan was so worried about him that she didn’t want him to be away from her sight for a single moment. She had already witnessed the loss of someone precious to her and she was scared that they might do something to Lu Feng too and she will lose her friend and her husband’s most trusted man.

Moreover, she was guilty of blaming and hurting him and if something had happened to him, then in her opinion she was the one to blame.

Lu Feng was sitting beside her, with his head lowered down as he was unconscious. The one man asked San Zemin, “What should we do with those two men?”

From the clothes, both looked like the servants in the farmhouse, so San Zemin instructed them to let them go and sat in the front passenger seat of Jiang Yuyan's car. The mission was completed, so he knew his boss would ask him or instruct him something.



# 666 Don't Try To Understand her...

“Where are we taking him?” Jiang Yuyan asked as San Zemin was in her car.

“It would be better to take him to the apartment as we can't take him to our place,” San Zemin replied.

“Hmm, and in such a condition we can't even take him to the Lu mansion too,” Jiang Yuyan commented as worry painted on her face.

San Zemin understood his boss's worry and said, “I will keep our men there to look after him so don't worry.”

Humming lightly while looking out at the darkness outside, so many things went through Jiang Yuyan's mind. She recalled the reasons why and how she doubted Lu Feng, but somewhere in her heart she knew he can't do it and wanted to give him a benefit of doubt.

When she saw the video on Lu Qiang's laptop where she thought the person was Lu Feng she recalled a few things. At the day of the accident Lu Feng was the one to go to the parking space in the mansion and stayed there for long and from what she knew that someone tampered the car must be the someone from the Lu mansion. Remembering that day after watching the video, Jiang Yuyan had a doubt that Lu Feng did it.

She was so angry at that thought because in the list of Lu Qiang's most trusted people, Lu Feng was there and it angered her that the person her husband trusted the most finally betrayed him.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng, whose head was moving lightly here and there as it didn't get proper support and he was unconscious. He was sitting stable with the support of the seatbelt.

Jiang Yuyan shifted towards Lu Feng and put his head on her shoulder so it would be stable. San Zemin noticed it and understood how important Lu Feng was for his boss, though he already knew about the four friends.

Only two cars went to Lu Feng's apartment while the other cars left to go back to their original place, one Jiang Yuyan's car and the other one was the butler's car with his two men.

On reaching the apartment, they settled Lu Feng in the bed and the butler came inside with one box which looked like the one doctor used.

The butler always carried this box in his car that filled with all the essential medicines and tools. Being in this field for long, he was aware of what kind of emergency situations they might have to face, from getting shot, stabbed or drugged and he had everything ready for such situations in that box.

It didn't surprise Jiang Yuyan, as she had already read about the butler in Lu Qiang's most trusted people's list. The butler, Bai Ye, was once a skilled surgeon but few crucial circumstances made him enter this side of the world and since then he was with Lu Qiang.

The butler was the eldest one among Lu Qiang's all men and he was like a father figure for him. Other than just helping with the unfamiliar tasks, the butler was like an advisor for Lu Qiang whenever it came to deal with the matters of emotions.

San Zemin and the butler were the two people who knew each secret of Lu Qiang, and they were his partners in all the good and the bad things.

Jiang Yuyan went out of Lu Feng's bedroom to let the men do their work. Lu Feng's clothes had been changed, and the butler injected him with the medicines.

San Zemin came out and saw Jiang Yuyan was sitting on the couch, leaning back with her eyes closed. It was about to be dawn soon and they spent the entire night dealing with the critical situations so she must be tired with all of this, thought San Zemin.

San Zemin looked at his boss for a while to know what exactly this woman was. In just a few hours, he saw distinct personalities inside her.

The emotional one seeing her husband's room and his belongings in the secret mansion, the next moment she was ready to know her enemies, the one who acted childish and excited to face the challenges, the fearless, reckless and cruel who shot the man without batting an eye, the angry but worried one to see her family in danger and now she was calm like still water in the lake.

The butler came out too after finishing his doctor's duty. He noticed San Zemin looking at Jiang Yuyan and put his hand on his shoulder just to comment. "Don't try to understand her."

"I doubt if I can," replied San Zemin.

Butler's men took his emergency box out and left the butler and San Zemin there. Just then Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and looked at two men standing in front of Lu Feng's room's door and asked, "Is he alright now?"

"Hmm! He regained his consciousness a little but he would be awake completely till the morning," the butler informed.

"If I go see him, will he recognize me?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"He might not remember even if he sees you," the butler replied.

"That's good." Saying it, Jiang Yuyan went to see Lu Feng.

Lu Feng looked like he was in a deep sleep, so Jiang Yuyan went to him directly. The condition she saw him in that farmhouse hurt her. He never talked much, but Jiang Yuyan had a different attachment with him. He was one good person.

Sitting beside the edge of the bed, Jiang Yuyan adjusted the scattered strands of his hair with her fingers to settle them away from his forehead and touched it to check if he had a fever, but he was fine.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng's right hand's wrist, which had the faded red lining around it caused by the steel handcuffs.

Holding Lu Feng's hand in hers, she checked the red mark and caressed it with her thumb as she mumbled.

“I am sorry for not giving you a chance to say anything and said those harsh words without a second thought.”

## 667 Secret Passage...

The tears rolled down from Jiang Yuyan's eyes and as it dropped on Lu Feng's hand. Adjusting the quilt on him, she wiped her tears and stood up to leave the room. San Zemin and the butler were standing outside.

"Don't tell him I was here and don't let him know whatever happened today. You were the one to bring him here."

Instructing, Jiang Yuyan left the apartment. Her driver, who was standing outside of the apartment along with the Butler's two men, followed her.

When Jiang Yuyan reached home, it was still dark, and the sun was about to rise soon. The butler of the mansion, Xu Dui, was present outside of the mansion the moment Jiang Yuyan arrived. He bowed to her and the next moment one servant with the huge bowl in his hands came to her.

"Hands!" the butler said, signaling at the bowl.

Jiang Yuyan understood and cleaned her hands with the water in the bowl while the butler gave her a white napkin to wipe her hands. Jiang Yuyan didn't know what was going on, but she understood butler was aware of where she was and why she was out till late.

"Follow me!" Saying, the butler turned and Jiang Yuyan followed him.

Butler took her at the backside of the mansion and they stopped at one door. Pressing the number on the security lock, he asked Jiang Yuyan to follow him inside. Behind the door, there was a huge room which was neat, clean and arranged just like the other rooms in the mansion.

Jiang Yuyan thought about why the butler brought her here, and just then he spoke. I have arranged everything for the third young mistress here. It won't be good if the young mistress goes to the fourth young master like this."

Jiang Yuyan observed herself in the huge mirror of the dressing table. She was in a messed up condition. Her clothes were messy with the stains of blood and dust on it. Her face looked tired, and her hair loose and messy.

Jiang Yuyan understood what the butler said was right. She shouldn't go to Lu Lijun like this or he may think where she was to come back in such a condition.

As Jiang Yuyan nodded, the butler informed, "The third junior master used this room before, now it's yours."

Jiang Yuyan got to know one more thing about Lu Qiang, but at the same time, she thought if the butler knew about Lu Qiang's other side too and the answer was clear- yes.

She remembered Lu Qiang's words when he once told her that the butler Xu Dui had information about everything in the mansion and the family. He was like a storage box of all the secrets, and now Jiang Yuyan finally believed it.

"I would like to show the young mistress something but before that, it would be better to change into fresh clothes. I will wait outside," the butler suggested.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan went to the wardrobe and saw the butler had already arranged everything and she didn't know what to think about it. So many shocking things were getting revealed these days and she was thinking what more things are there which she was not aware of.

Once Jiang Yuyan was ready, she informed the butler who was waiting outside of the room. The butler went to the one door in the room and Jiang Yuyan followed him. The door opened in front of the staircase.

"This staircase will lead the young mistress to the second floor." Saying it, the butler stepped to climb the stairs and Jiang Yuyan followed him. The place was brightened up with the lights."

Both reached the end of the staircase which ended at one small floor which ended up to the wooden wall which had two security locks at either side. The butler pressed the numbers on the security lock and the one single door size part of the wall

turned at a nineteen-degree angle to make space and the butler led her way inside.

To Jiang Yuyan's surprise, she entered inside Lu Qiang and her bedroom on the second floor.

"What was the other lock on the wall? Where does it open?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"That opened in Young mistresses' previous room." Jiang Yuyan felt her mind heavy with the realization of so many things and not a word could come out from her throat.

"The password on every security lock is young mistress's birthday. If there is something young mistress needed the help with, this servant is always there." Informing the butler went back through the way they came.

Jiang Yuyan realized, when she started living in this room after the wedding, there were few times when Lu Qiang suddenly appeared in the room which surprised her but she never thought about it thinking it must be her illusion and she never asked him.

Jiang Yuyan looked at the bookshelf, behind which there was a secret passage. Something clicked in her mind and she went to the bookshelf. She saw, inside the bookshelf, there was a hidden tiny lock and pressed the numbers of her birthdate.

When she went back into the secret passage, she went towards another lock on the wooden wall and the moment she pressed the numbers, the door in the wall shifted back. She entered inside and as the butler said; it opened in the room where she used to stay before the wedding.

Jiang Yuyan remembered her first day in the Lu Mansion when she locked the door and went for the bath, but when she came back, Lu Qiang was already in the room that surprised her. Now she realized how he came inside her room.

The information on these secret things and how her memories with Lu Qiang connected to it was making her feel like crying. She felt her head hurting with so many things going on in her mind and she couldn't get what exactly to think about.

# 668 Didn't Break The Promise...

Holding her head in her hands, with her eyes shut tightly while the tears rolled down from her eyes, Jiang Yuyan was crying but she couldn't get what exactly she was crying for.

Everything that happened till now was getting too much for her to handle and she felt like her head would burst open soon. She wanted to sit somewhere and sought support, but even before she could reach the chair; she fell unconscious.

In a while, the room's door opened and Ning Jiahui entered the room. Since Jiang Yuyan left the mansion, Ning Jiahui was restless. The whole night she spent waiting for Jiang Yuyan and asked the butler to inform her if she was back.

When Ning Jiahui got to know about Jiang Yuyan was back and where she was, Ning Jiahui straightaway came to Jiang Yuyan to see if she was fine but she never thought to see Jiang Yuyan lying on the floor, unconscious.

"Yuyan!" Ning Jiahui called her name, but there was no response.

Feeling scared, Ning Jiahui called the butler on the intercom and told him everything. Soon the Lu Family's personal doctor- doctor Tang arrived there with the butler holding his bag. Seeing Jiang Yuyan in such a condition, the tears couldn't stop coming out from Ning Jiahui's eyes.

"Her body and her mind are under too much stress. She needs to rest or it will affect her health badly," informed doctor Tang.

Nodding, Ning Jiahui asked, "Is she hurt somewhere?"

"Not right now but her body has gone through a shock of an accident and it's been just a few days since she lost her baby. Not just physical, but mental damage is there. She is still so weak and needs to rest more."



“I understand,” said Ning Jiahui as she looked at Jiang Yuyan worriedly.

“How about sending her somewhere away from here just for a change?” Doctor Tang suggested that Ning Jiahui doubted if Jiang Yuyan would agree to this and said, “I will try.”

It was the morning, and Lu Lijun was awake. He looked around the room, but Jiang Yuyan was not around that made him sad. Being a dutiful boy, he got refreshed and sat on the couch while looking at the table clock as Jiang Yuyan promised him to have breakfast together.

Till breakfast time, Jiang Yuyan woke up and saw Ning Jiahui sitting on the couch, and it surprised her. She couldn't recall what happened to her.

“Mother!”

Going to her, Ning Jiahui asked, “How are you feeling?”

“I am fine. What happened..why I am.....”

Interrupting her, Ning Jiahui replied, “Doctor asked you to rest as you are weak and fell unconscious suddenly.”

“I am fine, mother.” Saying, Jiang Yuyan looked at the table clock and tried to get up from the bed, but Ning Jiahui stopped her.

“Don't get up. I will bring your breakfast here.” Ning Jiahui instructed.

“I promised Lu Lijun to have breakfast together. I need to go to him,” Jiang Yuyan countered, but Ning Jiahui didn't wish to listen to her.

Sitting at the edge of the bed, Ning Jiahui held Jiang Yuyan's hand and said, “He will be fine, Yuyan. You should worry about yourself first. You are so weak and it worries me.”

“I will take care of myself, mother, but at least let me go to him. I promised him to have breakfast together and you know what the meaning of promise is for him,” Jiang Yuyan requested.

Agreeing, Ning Jiahui said, "Okay, but I too need one promise from you,"

"Tell me, mother."

"You will not go out of the home for at least a week and you will rest properly," Ning Jiahui asked.

Not willing to disappoint her caring mother-in-law, Jiang Yuyan agreed, "Promise."

Feeling relieved with it, Ning Jiahui offered, "I will send Lu Lijun here and you can have breakfast together."

"Not here mother. This room and also, I don't want him to know I am not well."

"Hmm, let me help you go to his room then," Ning Jiahui offered and Jiang Yuyan nodded.

Jiang Yuyan didn't want Lu Lijun to come to that room as it would only remind him about Lu Qiang and seeing her sick, Lu Lijun might worry so she didn't want to let him know.

There was a knock on the door but Lu Lijun didn't reply and didn't get up to open it. He was just staring at the clock as just ten minutes left for his breakfast time. It was not like he was punctual about breakfast time, but today he was trying to be as Jiang Yuyan didn't show up.

Jiang Yuyan knew what would be the condition inside the room so she entered the room and straightway went to Lu Lijun who was not looking at her and who was sitting with his hands folded in front of his chest as his face looked cold.

Kneeling down in front of him, Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "I am sorry for being late, Lu Lijun, but I didn't break my promise. See, there are still ten minutes left for it."

Lu Lijun moved his sight to look at her. Though she was smiling, her face looked pale and dull. Lu Lijun's sight examined her face, and finally, there was some movement from him.

Letting his hands-free from the folding then in front of his chest, Lu Lijun raised one hand, and before Jiang Yuyan could

understand he touched her forehead. She didn't have a fever, but her temperature looked on the higher side than normal.

Lijun held her hands just to make her stand up and signaled her to sit on the couch. It surprised Jiang Yuyan because when she entered the room; she thought she had to work on melting the little iceberg but happened otherwise.

Lu Lijun dialed the intercom number and instructed, "Bring breakfast."

Another shock for Jiang Yuyan that he said two words at least, and she got to hear his voice. Ning Jiahui, who was standing at the door, felt relieved seeing Lu Lijun didn't trouble Jiang Yuyan and she left to go downstairs.

## 669 Reality, Not A Dream...

In Lu Feng's apartment...

There was a movement in Lu Feng's bed. Lu Feng who slept for a long time looked like he was having a dream as his forehead had furrowed lines and it was something that hurt him.

"I am sorry for not giving you a chance to do anything and I said those harsh words without a second thought."

These lines were buzzing in his ears with the sound of sobbing as someone was crying and apologizing to him. He was trying to say it's fine but couldn't say a word as if something was holding him back.

"Yuyan!"

Exclaiming her name, Lu Feng opened his eyes and tried to look around with his blurry vision, but there was no one. He looked at the backside of his right hand's palm as he thought the tears from her eyes rolled down and fell on it, but when he checked it, there was nothing. He checked it, again and again, to make sure there was something and he felt the warmth of the tears on it, but he got disappointment in return.

'Was it a dream?' he thought and looked at the ceiling just to realize it was his bedroom and he was in his apartment. "How can I be here? It must be a dream."

His head still hurting and his vision blurry, Lu Feng looked around the room and then to his left hand, which had an IV drip attached to it. 'How did I come here?' he thought as he tried to get up and sat in the bed.

Lu Feng looked at the door of his room just to close his eyes in the pain of headache as one more memory flashed in front of his eyes. He could remember a familiar voice instructing something to someone. Pressing his temples with his eyes closed, he tried to remember it.

“Don’t tell him I was here and don’t let him know whatever happened today. You were the one to bring him here.”

With his head hurting badly and trying to remember it all, he recognized the voice and said, “Yuyan!”

Lu Feng looked at the door of his room to make sure if it was his imagination or it happened for real.

“Why was she here?” he thought and just then San Zemin entered the room.

“How are you feeling, Mr. Lu Feng?” San Zemin asked.

“How did I come here?” Lu Feng asked, not replying.

“When I realized you were missing and saw the news of someone shooting one bastard, it didn’t take me time to find out that you must be in trouble,” San Zemin answered.

“Was your boss here?” Lu Feng asked.

“No,” San Zemin lied confidently.

Lu Feng Chuckled a little as he understood San Zemin was following his boss’s order and commented, “Such an obedient man you are, San Zemin.”

“Is she hurt?” Lu Feng asked and San Zemin had no other choice but to answer him as Lu Feng concluded what he could.

“No.”

“If she doesn’t want me to know that she was here, I’ll pretend as if I know nothing,” Lu Feng declared and San Zemin felt relieved as he knew it was impossible to hide anything from a smart man like Lu Feng.

When Jiang Yuyan went to Lu Feng, he was under the influence of drugs, but his brain stored the blurred memories which he believed were not real. He could remember he was sitting in the car with his head resting on Jiang Yuyan’s shoulder, but he thought of it as a dream.

Lu Feng remembered she was sitting beside him on the bed, caressing his hair and his hand while crying and apologizing but at that time this seemed like a dream to him until he

remembered the last thing she said to San Zemin while leaving.

He was sure it couldn't be a part of his dream as San Zemin was in front of him and it assured him what he thought to be a dream was the reality. She knew the truth that he never betrayed Lu Qiang. She cared for him and came to get him back.

Lu Feng was glad, but when he realized Jiang Yuyan knew the truth, he felt worried and looked at San Zemin just to question him.

“Your rats must have recorded my conversation with my brother.”

The way Lu Feng said it, San Zemin had no space to deny it. He thought why this man is smart to always catch him off guard.

Not getting any answer from San Zemin, Lu Feng continued, “I don't care what you did but I hope you haven't shown it to your boss yet.”

“I didn't,” San Zemin replied.

“If you do, you will lose your boss once again so better not show it to her,” Lu Feng replied.

San Zemin countered, “But one day I have to show it to her and I am sure she will ask me about your whereabouts after you left the village and what you did. She knows what we can do.”

“Crop the important part and show it to her or just show nothing, making an excuse of you couldn't capture it.”

“She will notice it. She is smart.”

Giving a deep sigh, Lu Feng spoke, “San Zemin, do I really need to tell you what to do or you are just finding excuses. Don't forget this is for her own good. Is it difficult to imagine what will happen if she gets to know it?”

“I will crop that part and give her just audiotape,” San Zemin concluded.

“Hmm, that will do and if you really want to see her alive, you should keep it from her.”

“I will.”

“I hope you won’t go back on your words because If something happens to her, I will be the one to kill you all,” Lu Feng warned.

San Zemin nodded and just then the butler came with the medicines.

“Early morning threatening words from one dangerous man, not a wonderful thing to hear.”

## 670 Raised A Gangster...

Lu Feng looked at him and said, "Seems like you didn't get the chance to use knives on someone that you want to try it on me. Take it out," Lu Feng instructed, putting his left hands up which had IV drip.

The butler stepped towards Lu Feng and took out the IV drip as he commented, "Good to see you after so long, Lu Feng. By the way, I pray that I won't ever have to use my knives on my people and they will always be safe."

"Since when am I among your people?" Lu Feng asked sarcastically once the butler finish his work.

"My boss's person is my person," replied the butler as he smiled and passed the medicines to Lu Feng as San Zemin gave him a glass of water.

"Sometimes I feel like getting your knife and cut this sweet talker tongue of yours," Saying Lu Feng accepted the medicines and water.

Smiling, the butler commented, "Young people nowadays don't know how to respect the elders."

"I don't see any elders around." Gulping the medicines, Lu Feng passed the glass to San Zemin.

"I will accept it as you are my boss's person."

Lu Feng didn't think in that way and denied, "You are mistaken, I am not your boss's...."

"You should have seen her when she grabbed the gun ready to kill the enemies for your sake," Butler said as he moved away from the bed and stood beside San Zemin.

"Huh? Gun?"

Avoiding the questioning gaze of Lu Feng, the butler continued, "They dare to touch my family. This is what she said when she readied her gun to shoot them. Such a wonderful sight it was."



“You can stop here, Ye Bai. Haven’t you hear boss’s order?”  
San Zemin said.

Before butler could say anything, someone barged inside the room. “Gun? Yuyan?”

That was Jiang Yang who heard the conversation, and it shocked him what the butler said.

Jiang Yang was worried about Lu Feng and when his sister didn’t answer his calls, he straightaway came to Lu Feng’s apartment where San Zemin’s one man was guarding the place.

When Jiang Yang got to know about Lu Feng, he didn’t ring the bell and instead went straight inside intending to kick his friends at least a few times to know why he disappeared suddenly but when he went to the room; he heard something shocking.

“What did I hear just now?” Jiang Yang asked as the three men were surprised by his sudden appearance, moreover, he heard what he should not.

“Even I don’t know what they are talking about, Jiang Yang. It’s something new for me too,” said Lu Feng.

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng both looked at San Zemin and the butler, who was not expecting Jiang Yang there. San Zemin gave Butler a look as if cursing him for being blabbermouth and the butler lifted his shoulders as if saying it was not his fault and he didn’t know Jiang Yang would be there.

Jiang Yang sat at the edge of the bed beside Lu Feng, being ready to hear San Zemin and the butler. Finally, San Zemin had to give up in front of them and told them everything about what happened in the factory and later in the farmhouse.

They were fine with Lu Feng knowing everything as he was in the list of Lu Qiang’s trusted people but they didn’t know Jiang Yang personally other than spying on him for a few times when San Zemin had to monitor him to get rid of any threat by Xi Cheng.

It shocked Lu Feng and Jiang Yang, and they thought there was some kind of misunderstanding, but San Zemin assured

them it was all the truth.

Lu Feng looked at shocked Jiang Yang and asked, “Were you not aware of this side of hers?”

“Trust me, I am shocked too. I didn’t know I raised one gangster,” Jiang Yang was still in a shock and he was trying to recall when his sister held the gun in her hand, but there was no such memory.

“San Zemin can you find out everything about her past and when did she learn it?” Lu Feng asked, and he got a shocking reply from San Zemin.

“I already did.”

“What? Why?”

“When boss got to know about Mrs. Lu’s past he asked me to get all the information about her since the day she stepped into the USA till the day she came back to china?”

“Then? Was Lu Qiang aware of it?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Hmm! But we just know she learned the shooting but never thought she must be this dangerous. Boss and I thought she just learned it to pass the time or out of curiosity but never thought she must be this skilled. I am as shocked as you both are,” said San Zemin.

“When did she learn it without me knowing it?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Just after a few months of Kung fu training, she started it. She used to go there by missing her school classes,” San Zemin gave Jiang Yang and another piece of shocking information.

“How come I never knew it and who took her there?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Once she had a fight bet with one guy in kung fu classes and on losing a fight with her, he offered her to take her to the shooting place owned by his family and allowed her to come there daily.”

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, “Are you guys going to continue this? I don’t want her life to be in danger.”

“She is the boss and we have to take her orders,” San Zemin countered.

“What orders she gave you?” Jiang Yang asked.

“That’s between boss and us and we can’t tell us to others,” came the firm reply from San Zemin.

This annoyed Jiang Yang, “Others? I am her brother and.....”

Lu Feng who was hearing everything calmly, held Jiang Yang’s hand to calm him down and said, “We can’t do anything about it, and don’t worry it’s not what you are thinking. They are not the gangsters or anything but just the backhand employees who help the Lu Corporation by dealing with enemies in other ways when there is no option and enemies try to cross the limits.”

## 671 She Is Scary...

“I mean to say, she will definitely do what she wants and we can’t stop her. If we do, you will turn these people against you. They will do what she wants and take her wherever she wants to go. You can’t stop them.” said Lu Feng as he looked at San Zemin and the butler, as those were the people he was talking about.

“Are you saying we should leave her in danger?” asked Jiang Yang.

“Calm down first. She won’t go killing people out there. It’s just to stop those who will create trouble, just like she brought me back here. Also, these people are there to protect her.”

“Brought you back? Where were you and what happened?” asked Jiang Yang as he observed Lu Feng to check on him if he was hurt.

“There are few assholes out there and one of those did this but nothing to worry about now,” smiling, Lu Feng replied as if it was not a big deal.

“What are you hiding from me?” Jiang Yang asked again as he was sure Lu Feng was hiding something.

“I am not hiding anything and there is nothing to tell you because you don’t know those enemies.” Lu Feng lied.

“But....”

“No more words as my brain hurts by explaining to you anything at this moment. Let me rest,” Lu Feng brushed it off before this smart friend of his could catch his lie and ask him to explain everything.

Hearing it, Jiang Yang realized why he was there and punched Lu Feng on the shoulder.

“Ahhh! What are you doing?” Lu Feng whined in pain as he rubbed his shoulder.

“You idiot. Do you know how worried I was?” Jiang Yang exclaimed furiously.

Before Lu Feng could say anything, Jiang Yang hugged Lu Feng tightly. San Zemin and Butler went out to give these two friends a space to argue over.

“Your brother and you, have you both planned to give me pain? First, he left and now you keep putting yourself in danger. My sister and I won’t forgive you both. I can’t do anything about him, but I can beat you as you are still alive,” said Jiang Yang as tears rolled down from his eyes.

Though his words sounded as if it was so easy for him to say, each word he said was painful for him.

Lu Feng hugged him back to let him cry for a while and said, “I am sorry, Jiang Yang.”

Jiang Yang let him go and said while still crying, “Just promise me you will be safe.”

Lu Feng nodded, “I promise.”

Once Jiang Yang was calm, Lu Feng asked, “How’s my uncle?”

“He was in critical condition yesterday but now he is stable.”

“Thank you for looking after him all the time. I know you are always there and never even went back home.”

“I am doing my duty as a doctor. I hope he will wake up soon but I feel bad for not being able with Yuyan when she needed me the most. I am scared she might do something rash.”

“I am sorry that I couldn’t stop a few things from happening,” Lu Feng apologized.

“We can’t turn the time back but we can just hope everything will be fine soon.”

After talking for a while Jiang Yang left for the hospital and Lu Feng turned on the TV. There was news that someone shot businessman Xi Cheng and he was in the hospital in the critical condition.

San Zemin came to Lu Feng's room to ask if he needed something, but instead Lu Feng asked, "How is his condition?"

"He is fine as the bullet hit him at the arm but they are faking it to make it look serious and to get sympathy. This way the things turned out that someone is targeting the businessmen in the city. First my boss and now this man," San Zemin explained.

"I shot him on the chest two times," said Lu Feng.

"He must have predicted your move and came there prepared by wearing a bulletproof jacket."

"I should have shot him in the head instead," mumbled Lu Feng as he said further, "I did it so that your boss won't get blood on her hands but..." Saying it, Lu Feng ran his hands through his hair in frustration.

"She knows about him now and the way she is taking it calmly, I am sure she has something in her mind. She seems scarier than your brother," San Zemin concluded.

Lu Feng could do nothing but to sigh.

---

At Xi residence...

"We should go to see him in the hospital," suggested Xi Guiren.

Song Meiling, who was sitting in the living room while going through the news, replied, "I don't care even if he dies."

"I know but it's for the sake of what you have planned for Nicky or others might think you have planned to kill and the people who are supporting you will go on his side as sympathy for him."

Xi Guiren's words made sense. Song Meilin was aware of it too, but she just didn't want to act as if she cared for him and decided not to see him.

"You don't have to say anything. Your presence in the hospital just for a few moments is enough. Don't let emotions get over

you to ruin your efforts,” Xi Guiren insisted, and Song Meilin nodded.

Nixxie, who was listening with her parents, was thinking about the news that someone was targeting the businessmen in the city. The one whom she thought might be involved in Lu Qiang’s accident was himself attacked by someone so it made her think her step-brother must have nothing to do with it and she felt relieved.

When Song Meilin and Xi Guiren went to see Xi Cheng in the hospital, there was tight security everywhere and two bodyguards were placed outside of the room. Seeing them, Xi Cheng’s assistant greeted and let their way inside the room.

## 672 Getting Ready For The Action...

Recognizing Xi Guiren, the doctor greeted him and he asked, "How is he now?"

"For now he is out of danger but we need to take care of him as the surgery was the critical one," the doctor informed as he was told while in reality there was nothing serious.

The doctor and the nurse left while Xi Cheng looked at his father and the step-mother putting an act that he was in too much pain, "Glad to see father and my step-mother here."

"Don't be so overwhelmed. I am here to put on an act just like you are doing right now." A sarcastic and cold reply came from Song Meilin.

"Even if I die one day for real, you will think all this is an act," Xi Cheng countered to which he got another bitter reply.

"Why don't you just try to make it real then?"

"Sigh, step mother wants me to die for real. How cruel."

Xi Cheng's mother didn't like it and finally spoke, "Sister, how can you say such a thing when my son....."

"I forgot it can hurt you as I don't have any son to realize the pain of a mother," another sarcastic set of words came from Song Meilin that shut Xi Cheng's mother.

"How long will you be here?" asked Xi Guiren, interrupting these two.

"At least for a week, father," Xi Cheng replied as he looked around the in the room, just to comment, "I can't see my little sister. It seems like she is not worried about her brother."

"She said, she has no brother." Saying, Song Meilin looked at her husband and asked, "Can I leave now?"

"Hmm!"



As Xi Guiren nodded, without looking back, Song Meilin left the room while Xi Guiren followed her as he had work to do. Xi Cheng's mother followed Xi Guiren to see him off, while Xi Cheng smiled as he mumbled, "Not a brother. Hmm, good to hear it."

Once no one was there, Xi Cheng called his assistant and asked, "What's the status?"

"All our men at the factory side died and as you instructed we let them take the person with them."

"Hmm, let them enjoy it for a while, as soon I will get them down on their knees. Have you recorded what I asked you too?" Xi Cheng asked.

"Hmm. here it is." Saying, the assistant showed his boss a tablet and helped him to sit in the bed, he showed him the recording in it.

"This Lu Feng will be the reason for the downfall of the Lus," Xi Cheng commented as the evil smile painted on his lips the moment he finished watching the recording.

"Boss, the way they killed our men, it looks like they are strong just like before, and losing their boss hasn't affected them."

"Did you get information about who is their new boss or they are operating on their own?" Xi Cheng enquired, being curious.

"Our men followed Mr. Lu Chen and Lu Han but they both don't have any connection with them and about Mr. Lu Feng, if he had the control in his hand, he wouldn't have done what he did with you?"

"Then what do you suggest?" Xi Cheng asked.

"For now, I don't think they have a boss but if they have, we have to play a game to get the boss out," the assistant suggested.

"You mean...."

"With this video, you can offer to get face to face dealing with the boss and I don't think the person is that strong to deal with

what we have in hand,” the assistant replied.

Xi Cheng got excited hearing it and instructed, “Get it ready then.”

“Next week, once the boss is out of the hospital,”

“Hmm.”

—

At the Lu Mansion...

Jiang Yuyan was resting in Lu Lijun’s room because Lu Lijun didn’t allow her to go out knowing she was not well. Jiang Yuyan listened to the little iceberg and her mother-in-law. Lu Lijun spent the day taking care of Jiang Yuyan by silently doing his work while sitting on the couch. He was being careful not to make any sound to disturb her and didn’t allow others to do so.

The lunch and the dinner for her were brought into the room which Lu Lijun personally paid attention to whether or not she ate properly. In the evening, Jiang Yuyan called San Zemin to enquire about Lu Feng.

“How is he now?” she asked, being careful that Lu Lijun won’t get what she was talking about. Seeing he was busy playing games, she thought it was the chance to make a call.

“He is fine and resting at the moment,” San Zemin informed.

“Don’t allow him to go out and even if he does, keep an eye on him.”

“We will.”

“Send me the information where he was after he left the village,” Jiang Yuyan ordered.

This is what San Zemin was scared about and he had no option but to do what Lu Feng had suggested to him.

Before San Zemin could say anything further, he heard another instruction, “And this time do it missing nothing. I want each and every detail.”

“Yes, boss,” said San Zemin.

The week passed by and Jiang Yuyan was ready for the action. She was feeling better with all the care she got from Lu Lijun and her mother-in-law. In between the week, Jiang Yang came to see his sister along with their parents, but he didn't tell her he knew about what she was doing these days.

Her parents were going back to the USA though they didn't want to, but Jiang Yuyan assured them she was fine and she didn't want anyone beside him. Her parents went back and Jiang Yuyan felt relieved that she didn't have to worry about them.

---

The day after a week, Jiang Yuyan went to her mother-in-law. Ning Jiahui was sitting in her chair and knew why Jiang Yuyan came to her.

“Mother, I want....”

“Have a seat first,” Ning Jiahui instructed, interrupting Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan sat on the couch opposite Ning Jiahui. Before she could say anything, Ning Jiahui spoke, “I want you to protect yourself first and do the other things later.”

“I will, mother,” assured Jiang Yuyan.

“Try to deal with things being rational and don't get swayed with the revenge,” Ning Jiahui instructed again but this time Jiang Yuyan kept quiet so Ning Jiahui asked, “What are you thinking, Yuyan?”

“The one who gave him pain has to go through the same.”

## 673 Either I die or they die...

This bonus chapter is dedicated to all my readers who are voting the novel diligently and supporting it to go up in the ranking.. third chapter would be there on it's regular timing-12am (GMT+8)

--

“The one who gave him pain had to go through the same..”

Jiang Yuyan commented that Ning Jiahui felt worried and warned, “Yuyan, I know you are hurt but I won't ever want you to do anything that will make you hate yourself. You won't feel it until you take the revenge but later you will think of yourself as a demon and that's not a good thing.”

“I have already turned into one, mother,” said Jiang Yuyan, her expressions cold and eyes devoid of any emotion.

Ning Jiahui didn't know how to convince her and felt bad about what this girl is going through at such a young age. “It's not late yet.”

“It is, mother and I won't stop unless I punish them or I won't be able to live,” Jiang Yuyan declared.

“We are here with you, Yuyan. Together we all can be happy and I know this is what Lu Qiang would want.”

Jiang Yuyan stayed silent for a while as Ning Jiahui mentioned Lu Qiang's name, but not allowing herself to feel emotional and weak, Jiang Yuyan looked at her mother-in-law.

“Mother, when I was in hospital, I gave myself two options. Either I die or they die. I tried to take my life, but I failed, so now it's their turn.” though her words were threatening, she was calm like a cold breeze.plea

“Yuyan....”

“I know mother cares for me but I don't want to disrespect you by not listening to your words so please don't convince me. I am sure mother must have felt the same as me when her son

died and the husband was struggling to be alive. Don't you want them to get punished?" Jiang Yuyan asked, interrupting her mother-in-law.

"I want but I care more for what I have with me. I have you, and I want you to be safe. You are my son's love and I will feel glad to have you by my side."

"I will always be by your side, mother, but I am sure you don't want to have me like one dead person beside you."

"I don't."

"Then don't stop me from doing anything. Once I am done, I will be what you want me to be," Jiang Yuyan assured, but still, Ning Jiahui didn't want her to do anything wrong.

"I remember my son was a lively person, but when he stepped into it, he became cold and had no life for himself. He changed only when you stepped into his life. I don't want you to go through what he had been through."

"I will be all right, mother. I have to be for the sake of Lu Lijun," said Jiang Yuyan.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan so adamant and with all the power she had in her hand, it was impossible for anyone to stop her so Ning Jiahui gave up with the assurance of Jiang Yuyan would be fine.

---

The same day, Lu's daughter Lu Zhilan came to Lu Mansion. It was her second visit to her parents after Lu Qiang's death but she couldn't stay with them as there was a family business conflict in her family with the death of her father-in-law. Her husband and son were dealing with the sudden disaster in the family while Lu Zhilan came to her parents.

"What the doctors said about brother?" Lu Zhilan asked as she was sitting with her parents in their room while Ning Jiahui accompanied them.

"They are not sure when he will wake up," elder Lu replied.

"And Yuyan?"

Giving out a deep sigh, elder Lu replied, “Poor child, trying to be tough for other’s sake.”

“But I am worried about her, father,” said Ning Jiahui.

“You need not be. She knows what she is doing,” elder Lu instructed.

“Is there something that I am missing?” Lu Zhilan asked and Ning Jiahui replied, “She got the power of Lu Qiang in her hand.”

“You mean....”

“Yes, and I am worried she might harm herself,” said Ning Jiahui, interrupting Lu Zhilan.

“Sister-in-law, being a woman doesn’t mean you are weak. If she got that power, that means she can handle it,” Lu Zhilan countered.

“Elder sister, you too are siding with her.”

“I am stating the fact. It’s difficult to get it and if Lu Qiang had passed it to her, that means he knew she could handle it.”

Just then there was a knock on the door and Jiang Yuyan entered the room. She greeted Lu Zhilan while Lu Zhilan stepped towards Jiang Yuyan just to hug her lightly.

“Such a strong woman you are. This aunt is proud of you.” Saying Lu Zhilan let her go while Jiang Yuyan stayed there silently.

Lu Zhilan continued, “If you ever need anything, don’t hesitate to come to me. Though this aunt is old, she sure holds the power to turn everything upside down.”

“I will,” Jiang Yuyan replied.

Lu Zhilan was a businesswoman and she was aware of all the things going behind the curtains in the business world not to forget the conflicts she had in her own family. She herself had done something behind the curtains that was needed and knew what Jiang Yuyan might do.

Not talking much, Jiang Yuyan looked at her mother-in-law and informed her, “I might be late.”

With worry painted on her face, Ning Jiahui nodded, but in her heart, she didn't want Jiang Yuyan to go anywhere.

Jiang Yuyan's car was ready outside of the mansion's door where the butler Xu Dui was standing. The night before the week he took Jiang Yuyan to the secret room in the mansion so Jiang Yuyan knew he was aware of everything but she wondered if he was connected to San Zemin and his men too.

"Have a great day, third young mistress," the butler wished and nodding Jiang Yuyan sat inside the car.

Jiang Yuyan realized the butler did this only for Lu Qiang whenever he went out so she thought, 'Am I his boss too and how much does he know about everything?'

## 674 Listening The Conversation...

On the way in the car, so many thoughts crossed Jiang Yuyan's mind. She was relieved that Lu Lijun allowed her to go out after breakfast. Her mind was roaming around what Lu Feng did once he left the village and how he ended up with Xi Cheng that made him shoot Xi Cheng and what was going on in Lu Feng's mind?

She was glad that Xi Cheng was alive and Lu Feng didn't end up being a murderer. Moreover, Xi Cheng was her prey to play with and she won't allow him to die without going through the pain that he will beg for death.

When Jiang Yuyan reached the secret mansion, everything was the same as if no one lived there. The moment Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the car and stood in front of the mansion's door, she looked at the camera above the door that scared the men behind the screen.

"What did we do today that the boss is giving us a scary look?" the one man asked.

"I don't know. We already opened the door," the second one replied.

"Does she want us to keep it open even before she reached the door?"

"Might be, from next time we should keep in mind that boss doesn't like to wait."

Both knew their boss who looked like any other ordinary girl, wearing a normal T-shirt, jeans and sneakers, was scarier than the actual professional women.

Jiang Yuyan entered inside where, just like her first day in the mansion, the butler Ye Bai and his two men were present and welcomed her. The butler smiled as he bowed to his boss,



“Good morning, boss,” while his two men bowed with the blank expressions.

Jiang Yuyan observed both the men as those were the snipers, but they were wearing the clothes of servants again. The white shirt, black pants and one black apron long up to the half of thigh was tied around their waists.

“Does these two love to work inside the home?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

The butler nodded as he explained, “Hmm, if they won’t, they might go crazy and kill all our enemies in a day.”

Jiang Yuyan kept looking at them while those two were standing silently, having no expressions on face and looking in front blankly.

San Zemin came out of his room and went to greet Jiang Yuyan, “Good morning, boss!”

Nodding lightly as accepting the greeting, Jiang Yuyan stepped to go upstairs as she asked, “I hope you have everything that I asked you to do.”

San Zemin followed his boss as he replied, “Yes boss.” San Zemin was holding a tablet and one tiny recorder in his hand.

Reaching the room that was brightened with the sunlight coming through the windows of the room, Jiang Yuyan sat on the chair opposite to the couch while San Zemin sat on the couch.

San Zemin handed her over the tablet which had few pictures in it. As Jiang Yuyan went through the pictures one by one, which showed where Lu Feng was and San Zemin explained every picture.

“Mr. Lu Feng left the village and came to the city directly until the morning. He called the elder brother, and they met at the highway in the next two hours. They talked for long and had an argument.”

Jiang Yuyan went through the pictures where Lu Feng and Lu Han were facing each other. Further she swiped there were the pictures showing some serious talk going between two

brothers and in next pictures Lu Feng's expressions turned angrier while Lu Han looked like he was crying.

In the next few pictures, Lu Han kneeled down while Lu Feng turned his back at his brother as he ran his hand through his hair with frustration. The next one showed Lu Feng left the place leaving his brother crying and didn't even turn to look at him.

"Have you recorded the conversation?" Jiang Yuyan asked as she was going through the pictures again.

"As they met at the highway, we couldn't get the video but I had an audio recording which had a problem but our people restored it."

"Give me," Ordering, Jiang Yuyan swiped further pictures where Lu Feng came back home, but later there was no picture of him leaving the home.

Keeping the tiny voice recorder on the center table, San Zemin played it and Jiang Yuyan paid attention to the conversation.

"Is everything alright, Lu Feng that you called me here?"

"Elder brother, I need your answer on this. In this video, it's you, isn't it?"

There was no sound for a while.

"Am I right, brother, that you sided with these people and betrayed our own brother?"

"Lu Feng...I..."

"Why did you do it, brother? How can you betray your own brother?"

"I did it for you, Lu Feng."

"For me? Who asked you too? Did I ever?"

"As our mother wished, I wanted to create one chance for you to get into Lu corporation. You never wanted to step into the business, so I wanted to create the condition where you would be forced to step into it."

“I would have never stepped into the family business, how many times did I clear this to you and mother?”

“I know, that’s why I did it. If Lu Qiang had given you everything on asking just once, you would have never accepted it. I wanted him to fail in a few important projects which would have created the doubt about his ability and the board would have thought to replace him. In such a condition, the board would have asked for another candidate and that one should be from a family, so you would have been the one. If Lu Qiang had requested you to handle the things, I know you would have agreed to it.”

“But I never wanted it, don’t you know, brother?”

“That’s the problem, Lu Feng, that you never wanted it and I had to do it.”

“Are you saying I am the one to blame for your doing?”

“No, but.....”

“Was there any other reason that you sided with them? Tell me the truth, elder brother.”

“They blackmailed me as I have embezzled the money from the company.”

## 675 But I was Late...

“You...really....”

“I am sorry but I did it and I am sure Lu Qiang knew about it.”

“He must know about it but he was the person for whom family came first so he must have kept it to him but what was the need when you had so much, elder brother?”

“I wanted to start my own business and just like him, I didn’t want any conflicts in the family. If I had told him about it, Lu Qiang would have asked me to get his position but I didn’t want it because I knew I was not capable as him. If I had gone out to get the finances, then there would be the news in the business circle about the conflicts in the family which would be false and bad for the business. To avoid this, I chose this way. Moreover, Qin Xiu is from one reputed business family so until when I would have let her parents be disappointed with me thinking their daughter is not the wife of any powerful businessman. They married her in this family thinking she would be the queen as I am the eldest son. I just wanted to do something on my own first and after getting success, I planned to return all the money to Lu Qiang.”

“What can I say now, elder brother? I just need an answer to only one question. Are you involved in Lu Qiang’s accident?”

“What?... Are you out of your mind, Lu Feng?”

“If you had betrayed your brother once for your own reasons or under pressure then it’s not impossible for you to help those bastards with these.”

“He was my brother, Lu Feng. Instead of harming him, I wanted to save his life and I would have done it even if it had cost my own life, but I was late.”

“What do you mean you were late? Did you know about all this?”

“The day before the accident, I went to meet Xi Cheng as he called me by blackmailing. When I went there, I heard his

conversation with someone who was instructing Xi Chen what to do and what his boss wanted him to do. That person didn't look like he was from China and seemed like he was a person of someone powerful out."

"Someone out from China?"

"Yes, I heard they were planning to hurt Lu Qiang. I couldn't control myself and barged into the room and almost beat Xi Cheng. His men got hold of me and he even asked me to be a part of their plan, but when I said no, they threatened me with the lives of other people in our family. He was already prepared to involve me in his plan and prepared everything. He showed me Qin Xiu's picture from where she was at that moment, saying their men might hurt her. Not just Qin Xiu, they had other people in the family as the target just to blackmail me. I was scared for others as the person who was ordering it was someone very powerful."

"Who was it and why they were doing it?"

"The day of the accident I planned to tell Lu Qiang....."

Jiang Yuyan stopped the recording as there was a sudden change in Lu Han's tone as it looked like he was crying suddenly while the moment before he was talking normally also he didn't answer Lu Feng's question about who the people were.

"Why does it feel like there is something missing in this recording?" Jiang Yuyan asked as she looked at San Zemin.

"As it was recovered by the team after having some problem with it, it must have missed a few words or something but from what I remember after hearing their conversation at that time, I can tell there is nothing important missing other than Mr. Lu Han, mentioning the name of Victor Magnus," San Zemin replied confidently that Jiang Yuyan stared at him for a moment and continued listening to the audio recording.

"The day of the accident I planned to tell Lu Qiang everything about their plans and that's why I was waiting to go with him to his office but before that this happened. I didn't know they planned it for just the next day as from their conversation I

thought they had time. When I said no, they must have understood I will tell everything to Lu Qiang.”

“You should have done it sooner, elder brother.”

“I am sorry I was late, Lu Feng, and every moment I curse myself for being late.”

With this, the recording ended and Jiang Yuyan understood Lu Han had nothing to do with Lu Qiang’s accident but it was sure that he betrayed her husband then whatever the reason was and she won’t let it slide.

San Zemin gave Jiang Yuyan further information. “After that, Mr. Lu Feng came back to his apartment. He didn’t come out for the entire day and the next day evening when we went there, the boss is aware of what happened.”

“How did Lu Feng end up meeting Xi Cheng?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“That we are not sure and neither we can expect Mr. Lu Feng to tell us everything, but he left home the next morning by fooling our men and missed the cameras so that we couldn’t take further pictures to know where he went,” San Zemin informed.

“He fooled you so easily,” Jiang Yuyan commented sarcastically and asked, “From where he got the gun. Does he have one?”

“He doesn’t. That gun he used, he bought it from the black market. After leaving the apartment and leaving the car on the highway, Mr. Lu Feng must have hired a cab to go to the black market and later called Xi Cheng.”

“So he already planned to kill Xi Cheng and went there intending to kill him,” Jiang Yuyan concluded.

San Zemin agreed, “Yes, and it was good that he didn’t use his own gun because they might use it against him.”

“So they want to use this incident to blackmail us,” Jiang Yuyan concluded.

“Looks like it.” Saying it, San Zemin showed Jiang Yuyan one video in the Tablet.

## 676 Only One Option...

In that video, there was a person who looked like he was waiting for someone. His hair messed up, the white shirt was not tucked in the pants as its bottom was visible through the black leather jacket he was wearing. That was Lu Feng.

One car skidded in front of Lu Feng from which Xi Cheng stepped out and went to Lu Feng. Just as Xi Cheng was about to say something, Lu Feng pulled out the gun from the inside the jacket and shot him, two shots at his chest, and a third one he missed as Xi Cheng moved away and the bullet hit him on the side of his shoulder. Just then something happened and Lu Feng fell on the ground and the video ended.

It surprised Jiang Yuyan that Lu Feng suddenly fell on the ground and asked, "Was he shot with a drug syringe?"

San Zemin nodded, "Hmm, and after that, they took Xi Cheng to hospital and took Mr. Lu Feng with them."

"This video...."

"It's sent by them," San Zemin replied knowing what his boss would ask.

"What do they want?"

"That we will get to know about once we meet them but I guess it would be something related to Lu corporation."

"And what can it be?"

"There is an uproar in the Lu corporations now. After the boss, there is no one who can handle it perfectly and enemies are trying to get the advantage of it. Mr. Lu Chen and Mr. Lu Han are trying their best, but it's not enough. We need someone like our previous boss."

"Lu Feng...." Jiang Yuyan asked.

"He already refused to work for Lu Corporation and even if there is a major problem, he won't meddle in."

“Is there any reason that Lu Feng never wanted to get into the Lu corporation? I never paid attention to it, but now I think there must be something that I am not aware of.”

“That even I don’t know, but I am sure the previous boss recently got to know about the reason as a few months back he asked me to get the whereabouts of Mr. Lu Feng on a particular day after the accident of Chairman Lu Jinhai.”

“And what was your report?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she was trying to connect the strings.

“That day Mr. Lu Feng went to the hospital to see chairman Lu Jinhai, spent his time there, and came back home.”

“Did Lu Qiang say anything to you?”

“He didn’t but those few days he looked stressed out. I thought it was because elder Lu was in the hospital so I didn’t ask and neither did the boss say anything to me.”

“Hmm, got it. Give me the details of what’s going on in Lu Corporation and set the meeting with that jerk.”

“I will send the files right away. If the boss wants to lead Lu Corporation...”

“I didn’t say, I will lead it.”

San Zemin said nothing and dialed the number of his closest man in the team to get certain files and the laptop to the boss’s room.

The man entered the room with a few files and the laptop in his hands. Handing it over to San Zemin he left. Just then the butler came inside with the tray in his hand that had a water jug and glasses in it. Keeping it on the table, the butler went to Jiang Yuyan.

“If there is anything the boss needs, let me know.”

“For now, have a seat,” Jiang Yuyan instructed the butler, and he sat beside San Zemin.

“Tell me,” Jiang Yuyan asked as she looked at the files in front of her.



San Zemin handed over one file to Jiang Yuyan and said, “This is the current situation at the company. Xi Cheng and few businessmen out there are trying to get the advantage of Lu Corporation not having any powerful leader. It’s easy for them to lure the board members and shareholders. There are few who are still loyal to chairman Lu Jinhai so they couldn’t do anything major but it won’t take long when those people would be forced to take the other side.”

“List of loyal people and the list of betrayers.”

As Jiang Yuyan said it, San Zemin handed her over two files.

As Jiang Yuyan went through both files, she commented, “Only a few loyal and more are betrayers.”

“In the business world, it’s nothing new as only money speaks,” the butler commented.

“Seems like we need to work on restructuring their brains,” Jiang Yuyan hinted.

San Zemin didn’t agree with Jiang Yuyan and explained, “Even if we do, It’s not a permanent solution. If there is no powerful leader, the board has the right to choose the right person as a president which would be of their choice and it would be bad if the person is the one to side with enemies.”

“We can support uncle Lu Chen on the backhand to make him strong.”

“It won’t work as they know he is not that capable. In front of everyone, they will fail him to prove himself as Mr. Lu Chen is a simple person to understand their tricks and turn the table on the spot. No one is afraid of him. About Mr. Lu Han, I am worried that they will bring out his money embezzlement thing in the company that will disqualify on the spot and being a father of Mr. Lu Han, it would be difficult for Mr. Lu Chen too.”

San Zemin was working with Lu Qiang since Lu Qiang took over Lu corporations so he was aware of each and everything in the company and how things work there. When he was explaining everything to Jiang Yuyan, he sounded more like a business advisor than one ex-detective.

Hearing What San Zemin said, Jiang Yuyan gave out a deep sigh as she thought about what to do. “I think we only have only one option. Even though he doesn’t want it, I have to make him ready.”

“Mr. Lu Feng?” San Zemin asked.

—

Today is sunday, the day of the reset for votes. More chapters would be there but it depends on the votes...

## 677 Visiting Lu Feng...

“Mr. Lu Feng?” San Zemin asked.

Jiang Yuyan nodded, but the butler countered, “Lu Feng will never listen to anyone so there is no use. He is the one who always punished himself for someone else’s faults. After what his brother did in the company and the way his brother betrayed his most loved person, Lu Feng would never step in the Lu Corporation.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan looked at the butler and asked, “Seems like Ye Bai knows Lu Feng well.”

“Not much but I have seen him going through the weak phase of life and I know what kind of person he is,” the butler said.

“I agree with Ye Bai. I know Mr. Lu Feng won’t agree to it,” said San Zemin.

Jiang Yuyan passed her sight across both the men in front of her. “The more I hear you people and more I get to know about the things, I feel like there are so many things I am not aware of and I feel troubled with from where to start and what to ask you.”

“There are so many things and the boss will get to know about it one by one,” said the butler.

“I wish to know how both of you came here and how you two know Lu Feng so well.”

As Jiang Yuyan said it, San Zemin and the butler looked at each other and Jiang Yuyan spoke again, “But only when you both are ready.”

The men nodded as they knew, being their boss, she should know about their pasts.

Jiang Yuyan was aware of both the men sitting in front of her were the respected personality once but some tragic incidents led them to this side of the world and she was curious to know

what exactly happened with these two and why Lu Qiang trusted them so much.

“I will try to talk to Lu Feng. Is he in his apartment?” asked Jiang Yuyan.

“He went out but I don’t know where because he doesn’t like it if we follow him.” San Zemin informed.

“There is no need to follow him unless he is doing something reckless.”

Just then there was a call on San Zemin’s mobile. San Zemin listened to what the person said and hung up the call. “They want the meeting tonight.”

“Tell them I am not free tonight and the meeting would be scheduled according to my preference,” Jiang Yuyan declared.

“But...”

“Send the pictures of that file to the person, he will listen to everything we say.”

San Zemin understood what file Jiang Yuyan was talking about. She wanted to send the picture of the file having Xi Cheng’s secret in it and Xi Cheng will have no other option but to listen to them.

“I want to meet Lu Feng.” Informing Jiang Yuyan got up from the chair while San Zemin and the butler followed her downstairs.

When Jiang Yuyan reached the door of the mansion, it opened even before Jiang Yuyan reached the door. Still, Jiang Yuyan stopped at the door and looked at the camera for a while and stepped out.

This again surprised the two men in front of the screen in the security room.

“What? What have we done this time?” the one man asked.

“I am thinking the same. We opened the door even before the boss reached there,” the second one replied.

“Is the boss teasing us or have we again done something wrong.”

“I can’t understand it too.”

San Zemin took Jiang Yuyan to Lu Feng’s apartment. When they reached there, this time San Zemin rang the bell. In the next few moments, Lu Feng opened the door.

Seeing San Zemin standing in front of the door, Lu Feng spoke, “Since when have you learned to ring the bell, San Ze.....”

Lu Feng stopped as San Zemin stepped aside and Jiang Yuyan stood in front of Lu Feng, whom he couldn’t see before as she was standing at one side.

Lu Feng stayed silent and turned around to go back inside as he left the door open. Jiang Yuyan followed him while San Zemin stood outside and closed the door.

Lu Feng went to the living room and turned to look at Jiang Yuyan. “Have a seat.”

Jiang Yuyan sat on the sofa while Lu Feng went to fetch something for her. Opening a refrigerator, Lu Feng pulled out a container of juice and poured it in one glass. Though he knew it was not the first time for Jiang Yuyan to be at his place, he preferred to consider it as her first time there.

For Jiang Yuyan, it was difficult to face Lu Feng after what she did with him and the way she talked to him during their last conversation in the village home.

On the other hand, Lu Feng didn’t know what to talk or what to say as he knew Jiang Yuyan was aware of what he did with Xi Cheng and what to answer her if she asked him about it.

Relaxing himself breathing deeply, Lu Feng went to Jiang Yuyan and offered her the glass of juice. Jiang Yuyan accepted it, “Thank you.”

Lu Feng sat on the sofa opposite Jiang Yuyan not knowing what to talk about and waited for Jiang Yuyan to say what she was there for.

Jiang Yuyan had a sip of juice and said, “I am sorry for misunderstanding you and being so harsh with you....”

“You don’t need to. Anyone on your place would have done the same.”

Lu Feng never expected an apology from Jiang Yuyan. For him, what she had gone through was too much to mind such minor things.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t stretch it much as she knew their relationship was not the kind that expected apologies for everything as the understanding they shared was enough and directly came to the point.

“I wish you to take Lu Qiang’s position in the Lu Corporation.”

Lu Feng looked at her for a while as it was the first time Jiang Yuyan was willingly asking him to do something but he was afraid to turn her down.

“I am sorry.....”

“Lu Corporation is going through a critical phase and we need someone trustable and capable,” Jiang Yuyan interrupted him.

Letting few moments of the silence pass as Lu Feng understood her concern, he spoke, “Yuyan, I am feeling bad to turn you down but this time I can’t help it so listen to me carefully.”

—

Today is the day of reset for votes so don’t forget to vote... 4th chap would be there if rank is back...

# 678 For The First And The Last Time...

Nodding Jiang Yuyan was ready to hear what Lu Feng wanted to say. “There are few things that you don’t know and I don’t wish you to know as I have been carrying its weight for long. I am not deserving to get it all what you are asking me to do,” said Lu Feng.

“Lu Feng...”

Jiang Yuyan tried to say something, but Lu Feng interrupted her. “Listen to me first, Yuyan and I hope after that you will understand me.”

Lu Feng was calm and his words gentle as he continued.

“Till now, you must have got to know what brother Lu Han did. After what he did, he failed all of mine, and Lu Qiang’s attempts to keep this family one and it’s hurting to know I was the reason. If I get that position, then those who wanted to see me there by doing the tricks will win in the end and I don’t want it. Lu Qiang worked hard to get what he had and I never want others to covet it.”

“You are Lu Qiang’s brother and if you get it, it won’t be wrong. Also, what brother Lu Han did, it’s not your fault,” Jiang Yuyan countered.

“But he is my elder brother and what he did, I was the reason for it so I am at fault too. After making him guilty by unintentionally forcing him to do what he never would have, I can’t get the power and position as if nothing happened. For his doing, I am responsible too.”

Jiang Yuyan had nothing to say. She remembered what the butler said- Lu Feng was the person who always punished himself for other’s mistakes. Now, she could understand the meaning of those words and she thought about what the butler must have witnessed about Lu Feng to know him so well.

What more Lu Feng had gone through and what was the moment he punished himself for someone else's wrongdoings. She continued looking at Lu Feng to know how many things this aloof person had kept buried inside and what he was referring to when he said- he was carrying a weight of so many things for long.

Just then Lu Feng spoke something that snapped Jiang Yuyan out of her thoughts.

"Moreover, I don't want to be a person who covets his brother's belonging when he is not with us." As Lu Feng said it, he was looking at Jiang Yuyan as if he would never get to see her again.

Jiang Yuyan thought Lu Feng was referring to just Lu Qiang's position and power, but there was something more to what he said, and that something she will never get to know about.

This man in front of her loved her like crazy for long and the only thing mattered to him was her happiness, even though in return he just got pain. He had only her in his mind and his heart, but he will never tell her.

For Lu Feng, the things that belonged to his brother included Jiang Yuyan too and he would never want her for him, that's why he didn't come back home on the day of the wedding in the village.

"I understand," Jiang Yuyan replied.

"You are the one who should take that position," Lu Feng spoke that surprised her.

"I don't want to....."

Lu Feng interrupted her, "You know well what kind of power you have in your hands and if you can handle it, then you are the one who can handle Lu corporation too."

"I am not interested in business." The firm reply came from Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Feng straight stared in Jiang Yuyan's eyes as he said confidently, "I am sure there are the things you have done that



you were never interested in, and never ever thought to do, but you did it because you loved him so much.”

These words from Lu Feng reminded Jiang Yuyan about what she did a week before. She killed the people which was the last thing she would ever do in her life but her love for Lu Qiang and the revenge of his death made her go crazy. In her heart, she knew she would not stop just with this and she would be worse soon.

Looking at her, Lu Feng understood what was going on in her mind and said, “The same thing applies to Lu Corporations too. Even though you are not interested in business, you should do it to protect what your loved one created with his blood and sweat and it would be wrong if you let his efforts go in vain.”

Jiang Yuyan stared back at Lu Feng as she thought she was the one who came here to convince him but the things were going the other way round and instead; she was getting convinced with his words. It showed how well he understood others.

Jiang Yuyan chuckled softly, “Sometimes I regret having you three in my life as you three know what will work for me and I am the one who ends up getting convinced by you three.” Jiang Yuyan was referring to these three men in her life.

Lu Feng had no words to say about this but he had something else to say, “If you decide to lead the Lu corporations, I am always here to help you with business as long as I don’t have to step into Lu Corporations.”

“I am not sure if I will,” said Jiang Yuyan and Lu Feng didn’t insist on her. He knew she would do it if she wanted to, otherwise, there was no use in insisting on her.

“I will take leave.” Saying Jiang Yuyan stood up to leave just then, Lu Feng called her as he stood up too, “Yuyan!”

Jiang Yuyan stayed at her place to know what Lu Feng wanted to say but to her surprise, Lu Feng stepped towards her. He stood facing her and said while looking into her eyes, “Something I will do for the first and the last time.”

Jiang Yuyan's eyes which showed how puzzled she was hearing what Lu Feng said, stared back into his gentle and caring ones.

## 679 His Care And Support...

Before Jiang Yuyan could understand, Lu Feng hugged her lightly, as he said, "I wish you to be strong always so that you will never give me a chance to do this again. Seeing you weak would only make me do this."

Jiang Yuyan was not ready for this and she never expected Lu Feng to do this. When she was acting all strong, this sudden caring gesture from Lu Feng surprised her and left her mind blank for a while. She stood frozen at her place while listening to Lu Feng as he hugged her and patted her head.

In a while, when Lu Feng let her go, Jiang Yuyan continued looking at him puzzled and surprised, and Lu Feng spoke again while looking back at her and holding her at hands.

"The day will come when you will feel tired of everything and you will want to do nothing but to cry. I wish you to come to me that day and I will be here to accompany your tears."

Jiang Yuyan's eyes turned teary hearing his words and as she looked at him, but her tears stopped at her eyelid because she was controlling herself from crying. Lu Feng touched her one eyelid with his forefinger that made the tear settle at his finger.

Looking at the teardrop at his finger he said, "You need not stop them in front of me." Saying, he moved his sight from his finger to her eyes.

Jiang Yuyan nodded slightly as tears finally rolled down from her eyes as if she had got to hear what she really wanted to. Lu Feng was her friend, but it was the first time after her childhood days she felt that he was someone she could rely on and that someone would be there to support her. He could understand well what she would do after this and he was the one who didn't try to stop her.

Jiang Yuyan wiped her tears and cleared her throat. "I will take a leave now."

Not saying anything, Lu Feng just nodded and Jiang Yuyan left. Once she left, Lu Feng closed his eyes as he exhaled through his mouth. Though he didn't show her, seeing her tears hurt him and made him emotional. He almost thought to hug her tightly to not let her go away from him just to keep her safe and away from all the dangers and the worries but there was nothing he could do to stop her but to support her.

---

After leaving Lu Feng's apartment, Jiang Yuyan went back to the Lu Mansion as she had to spend some time with Lu Lijun because she would have to make up for the time she would spend away later in the night. On the way, San Zemin asked, "Boss, what should we do about Xi Cheng?"

"First let me deal with the problems in Lu Corporation and later we can use him to set an example for others to show what will happen if they try to mess up with Lu Corporation," Jiang Yuyan replied.

"Hmm!" As San Zemin agreed, Jiang Yuyan spoke again, "Rest assured, he will get the fair share of his punishment, till then get the driver of that truck and that woman in the VIP room. Also, get the information about the person who attached that device to Lu Qiang's car."

Initially, Jiang Yuyan thought to finish everything with the end of Xi Cheng, but as she got to know more things, she felt responsible towards protecting them. Lu Qiang's dreams were her priority now. Getting Lu corporation out of the trouble and getting Lu Lijun at Lu Qiang's position was what she planned, but it was not that easy. She had to plan everything step by step.

"Send me everything related to Lu Corporation," Jiang Yuyan ordered.

Nodding, San Zemin suggested, "I will but it would be better if the boss gets help from Xiao Min as he is aware of everything related to the business as well this side of ours."

"Where is he?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

“He is assisting Mr. Lu Chen in handling the situation in the company.”

“Tonight I will meet him at our place,” Jiang Yuyan instructed.

“I will pass the message.”

Lu Lijun was happy to see Jiang Yuyan home early, and he didn't leave her side even for a moment. San Zemin provided all the information about Lu's corporation to Jiang Yuyan. She spent her time by studying it in Lu Lijun's room while Lu Lijun was doing his stuff.

Lu Lijun missed his school for so many days and that worried Jiang Yuyan. Lu Lijun was playing on his laptop as Jiang Yuyan sat beside him on the couch.

“Seems like an interesting game,” Jiang Yuyan commented.

Not saying anything, Lu Lijun shifted the laptop towards her as if asking her to try it herself. Accepting it, Jiang Yuyan tried to play it as she said, “Lu Lijun, how about going to the school from tomorrow?”

Lu Lijun said nothing and his silence worried her. “I am not forcing you. I am just asking if you are ready.”

Still, there was no response from him, so finally, Jiang Yuyan stopped playing and looked at him. “I would be happy to see you going to school and I would be even happier seeing you as the best person like your elder brother.”

Lu Lijun stared at her for a moment and spoke, “I will.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy as he replied to her finally but didn't express it and said normally, “Good. tomorrow I will drop you at the school.”

Just the mention of his elder brother was enough for Jiang Yuyan to convince him, though it was the last thing she would want to try it on him. She knew Lu Lijun would do anything for the sake of Lu Qiang.

While going through the information about Lu Corporation, Jiang Yuyan could understand so many things and she realized, studying business management was helping her somewhat to understand the various terms and things. She had

left one more year of her university days but she thought to skip it as she didn't have time for it. moreover, she had already studied the entire course before hand so there was no need for her to do so.

## 680 Warning...

When Jiang Yuyan left, after some time, Lu Feng left his apartment too. He knew after making sure he was fine, Jiang Yuyan wouldn't ask her men to keep an eye on him and he was free to do what he wanted. He wanted to go somewhere since a week, but having San Zemin's men following him all the time made it difficult for him.

Lu Feng straightaway went to the hospital where Xi Cheng was admitted and it was the last day of his stay in the hospital. When Lu Feng went there, Xi Cheng's assistant informed him about his arrival.

"Boss, Mr. Lu Feng is here, and he wants to meet you," the assistant informed Xi Cheng who was sitting in his bed while reading the news.

Hearing it, Xi Cheng left out a chuckle. "I was expecting him here, but he took too much time."

"So, what should I ....."

"Send him inside," Xi Cheng instructed.

Before letting him enter the room, the guards standing out checked Lu Feng in case if he was carrying something harmful with him.

Standing there with his arms stretched on both sides to let the guards do their job, Lu Feng spoke, "If I want to kill your boss, I can just do it with my bare hands."

Saying, Lu Feng looked at the assistant as his lips carried a teasing smirk that annoyed the assistant but he stayed quiet as Lu Feng was the person whom someone like the assistant won't even dare to touch.

The assistant led Lu Feng's way inside Xi Cheng's room. Xi Cheng welcomed him with a fake pleasant smile as he said, "Good to see you here, Lu Feng."

“I wish if you were not alive to say this.” Saying, Lu Feng sat on the chair in the room, his expressions neutral and his voice calm.

“What can we do as God is not in a hurry to call me up there?”

Ignoring him, Lu Feng spoke, “I am here to tell you that don’t try to use anything related to me to blackmail others.”

“Others? I wonder who is that other person if it’s not you.”

“You need not know, as the moment you will know it, you might regret it.”

“Ohh! Looks like there is someone scarier than you two brothers.”

“You will know it soon. Just keep in mind what I said just now.”

“I am afraid that I might disappoint you, Lu Feng, as I have already done that. Do you want to take a look at how you looked when you shot me?”

The moment Xi Cheng said it, his assistant handed over the tablet to Lu Feng in which he could see the video. Lu Feng watched the whole video. It was exactly the one they sent to San Zemin, at the end of which Lu Feng fell on the ground.

“You could have done better with the video, Xi Cheng,” Lu Feng commented as he threw the tablet at the assistant, and the assistant somehow managed to catch it.

“Better? Isn’t it enough to show how the son of Lu Family tried to kill one businessman in the city just after the few days of his cousin’s death, who was also the businessman? Is it that he killed his cousin too for the sake of power? How about this as the headline of the news?”

Lu Feng left out a chuckle and said, “That’s why I said you could have done better. In the video, it shows I shot you on the chest but it didn’t affect you because you were wearing a bulletproof jacket that simply shows that you were prepared for it. Now the question is, why did you go there when you knew I planned to kill you and why didn’t you report to the police, instead of locking me up. Of course, you won’t say you



locked me up but so they will ask why did you let me go. It would have been better that you should have got the bullets in the chest to prove me a killer. I wasted those three bullets for nothing.”

“I can still manipulate this video to make you a killer,” said Xi Cheng.

“I have given up on my life long back, Xi Cheng. You can’t scare me with this. I am not afraid of losing anything. You just think about yourself.”

Xi Cheng left speechless with this and Lu Feng continued, “Let me get to the facts now. You never planned to show this video to the world, but you just planned to blackmail the person from the Lu family who would handle the Lu corporation just to get what you want.”

“If you know this, then be ready to see me in the Lu Corporation and how I crush it under my feet,” Xi Cheng threatened.

Lu Feng laughed a little, “I will say stop being delusional and drop the idea because you won’t succeed in it.”

“We will see, then.”

Lu Feng got up from the chair to leave the room. As he opened the door, he stopped.

“Xi Cheng, I can still kill you and I don’t care even if it costs me my life, but this time I want to leave it to the person who really deserves to kill you. I wish you a painful death that you will regret why you didn’t die in my hands.”

Saying Lu Feng left and Xi Cheng ordered his assistant, “Find out who has taken Lu Qiang’s place.”

Lu Feng’s words somewhere scared Xi Cheng as he thought who might be the person and why Lu Feng was so sure about that person. Moreover, not being able to think who that might be was making him go crazy.

—

Lu Feng called San Zemin and asked, “Did you get the video?”

“Yes.”

“Have you shown it to Yuyan?” Lu Feng asked.

“Mr. Lu Feng, she is the boss now so....”

“I know. Just answer me.”

“Yes.”

“Don’t let the guards down for my sake. I would be fine.”

“Boss has a different plan for him so he has to listen to her instead.”

“Good to hear it and I know you won’t tell me what the plan is so I won’t bother to ask but whatever it takes, no need to fear him or I will take the matter in my hands,” Lu Feng warned and San Zemin agreed.

“I will keep in mind.”

# 681 Time To Save The Business...

The late-night after the dinner, Jiang Yuyan noticed Lu Chen was going to the gallery on the first floor alone and he looked tense. Every day at the time of the breakfast or dinner, Jiang Yuyan noticed that uncle Lu Chen was unusually silent, and he didn't even eat properly.

She could guess what the reason might be and went behind him to the gallery. Lu Chen was standing alone, looking out at the sky blankly. It was the first time Jiang Yuyan would talk to him other than normal talk in the home. She hardly had any conversation with him.

"Uncle!" Jiang Yuyan called him as she stood behind him a few steps away.

Lu Chen turned to look at her and greeted her with a smile because he didn't want to show her that he was stressed out and surrounded by so many worries.

"Yes, dear."

"Uncle looked stressed out these days," Jiang Yuyan commented.

"It's nothing. I am just a bit tired. I would be fine after getting good sleep," said Lu Chen.

Jiang Yuyan understood that the uncle didn't want to worry her and directly came to the point. "I know you are stressed out with the things in the Lu Corporation."

Giving out a deep sigh, Lu Chen nodded, "Hmm!"

"Everything would be fine," Jiang Yuyan tried to comfort him.

"Everything is being messed up and seems difficult to handle. I am worried what will I answer to elder brother if he sees his hard work of so many years went in other's hands."

Lu Chen didn't share his worries with anyone, but as Jiang Yuyan herself came to him, he thought to express himself.

"Hmm! I heard they are trying to get someone in Lu Qiang's position and father's too."

"I am worried about that too. If they challenge elder brother's position, claiming he is in a vegetative state and gets the hold of Chairman and president's chair too, then we will lose Lu corporation."

"How about you get Lu Qiang's position and later we can manage to keep father's position as it is?" Jiang Yuyan suggested.

"It's not that easy as they have so many things to challenge against me, also they have stronger candidates. Even if I manage to get the position, to control them all we need someone like Lu Qiang. Your uncle is old and I don't want to delude myself thinking I can handle it when I know I might not."

"I talked to Lu Feng today but....."

Lu Chen continued where Jiang Yuyan stopped, "He must have said no."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Chen gave out a deep sigh as feeling regretful, "My two sons, when this family needs them the most, both don't want to take responsibility. What can be worse for any father?"

"Brother Lu Han?" Jiang Yuyan asked even though she didn't want Lu Han to take Lu Qiang's position. Although he did nothing extreme, for her, he was the one who betrayed her husband.

"He didn't want to do it and went back to handle the business in the village."

As Lu Chen said it, Jiang Yuyan felt better, thinking Lu Han still had his conscience alive.

Lu Chen continued, "Soon there will be a board meeting and they will take advantage of the elder brother's condition. I

wish him to wake up early so I can manage to save his position, at least before they challenge it.”

“Are all on the same side?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“I visited most of them personally who are loyal to my brother and Lu Qiang but the number is less and few of them might go to another side. Those who were scared of Lu Qiang are free now and they can betray us anytime.”

“I see and how about projects?”

“The recent ones are at a halt. The value of shares going down and investors are turning their backs to us. Those who have been eyeing on Lu Corporation for long bought most of the shares at a lower price and we only have one option to keep major shareholders with us. Few of them are from out of China so we need to get them too so they would be with us, but alone I can’t go everywhere.”

“When is the board meeting?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“The first day of the next week,” Lu Cheng replied.

“Just four days from now.” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed as she didn’t think, the things would go so faster.

“Yes, and practically we don’t have time,” Lu Chen concluded.

“Don’t worry uncle, we will find the way. You should sleep now,” Jiang Yuyan assured.

“Hmm!” Lu Cheng nodded and Jiang Yuyan turned to leave, but he called her. “Yuyan!”

Jiang Yuyan turned to look at the uncle, “Yes, uncle.”

“I know this is too much to ask you in such a condition but I have one suggestion if you are ready.”

Jiang Yuyan stood there to hear further and Lu Chen continued, “I wish you to take Lu Qiang’s position.”

It didn’t surprise Jiang Yuyan, “Uncle, I am not that capable.”

“You can be and for now you are the better option as you are from the family and in such condition, it would be bad to give

the control in the outsider's hands. Also,...don't get me wrong....”

“You can say it, uncle,”

“After Lu Qiang, his everything passed on to you and you and as his wife, you have the right to claim his position. The power you got from him, his side of shares, wealth, and other things can help you control the things,” said Lu Chen.

“What if I give you the control over Lu Qiang's wealth? Won't it help?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she didn't have any plan to get into the Lu Corporation.

“As I said before, I am not that capable. Either you take control or we need someone like Lu Qiang whom we can trust blindly.”

“If you have someone trustable in mind, then let me know. Together we might stand to all this,” Jiang Yuyan suggested.

“Hmm!

Jiang Yuyan left to go back to the room where Lu Lijun was waiting for her to return. She had so many things to do, looking after Lu Lijun, trying to find out the solution for Lu corporation's issues and handling the enemies on the backhand.

# 682 Start Of The Serious Business....

After putting Lu Lijun to sleep, Jiang Yuyan planned to go back to the secret mansion where she had to meet Xiao Min to discuss the situation about the Lu Corporation.

When Jiang Yuyan went back to the bedroom, Lu Lijun was sitting silently and showed he was not happy with Jiang Yuyan going out for work. He wanted her to be with him, but he didn't say it. His protest was clear on his face as he didn't look at Jiang Yuyan even once.

Jiang Yuyan understood it. Lu Lijun never did it before, even though he didn't want her to go away and always listened to her. It seems like that day he really didn't want her to go. For his sake Jiang Yuyan dropped the plan of going out, because to her, he was more important than anything.

She wanted to reward him for being a good boy and for listening to her these days, which made things easy for her. Seeing Jiang Yuyan pulled out her night pajama from the wardrobe and went to the bathroom to get changed, Lu Lijun understood she was not going out and it made him happy.

He folded back his things, which he was working on, and got up from the couch to go to the bed. Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom and went to the bed. Lu Lijun, who was already sleeping in the bed, looked at her as she fixed his quilt and said, "You are sleepy early today, Lu Lijun."

Lu Lijun nodded and continued looking at her as she went to turn off the lights in the room and lay on the bed beside him. The next moment, Lu Lijun held her hand and closed his eyes. It was nothing new for Jiang Yuyan as Lu Lijun had caught a habit of sleeping while holding her hand as if he didn't want her to go anywhere.

—

The next day, Jiang Yuyan went to the secret mansion where Xiao Min was already there to meet her. His father Xiao Dong, who was Lu Jinhai's assistant, was assisting Lu Chen so Xiao Min could make it there.

First Xiao Min was emotional about seeing his lady boss. He saw her last time when he went to Lu Mansion to give her the last gift prepared by Lu Qiang for her, and after that, he couldn't gather the courage to face her. He was busy all along handling the problems in the Lu Corporation. When he got to know about Jiang Yuyan being a new boss, it shocked him and he didn't want her to be there thinking it would be dangerous for her. He never wanted his boss's most loved person to be in any kind of danger.

Later, when he got to know about what Jiang Yuyan did after becoming a boss, he was shocked, and just like others he thought to accept her as his boss and support her.

"How are you, Xiao Min?" Jiang Yuyan asked, looking at the Xiao Min who was sitting on the couch opposite to her.

"I am fine, boss," replied Xiao min.

Xiao Min calling her a boss surprised Jiang Yuyan but as usual, she didn't react and accepted it.

"We have four days till the board meeting and I need your advice on everything," Jiang Yuyan instructed.

Xiao Min was among those names in the list of Lu Qiang's most trusted people other than San Zemin, the butler Ye Bai and Lu Feng. The list had few more people, and she was waiting to meet them all soon.

"I have prepared everything already but we just need to find out a few ways to deal with it," Xiao Min replied as he passed one file to Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan went through the files and Xiao Min said, "To protect the position of president we need the votes from these people but no need to get them all on our side. We have to work by calculating everything if the procedure went in one of the two different ways."

"Two ways?" Jiang Yuyan asked.



“The first one is when the result favors the side with the major percent of shares. So for that just need a few major shareholder’s support that will beat others.”

“Hmm!” Jiang Yuyan saw the profiles of the people inside the file and the percent of shares they were holding.

Xiao Min continued, “Out of all, Boss and Mr. Chairman have the most percent of shares. In that list, the first three people are loyal to get on our side but we need two which are real headaches. The fourth and fifth ones should be on our side. If they side with others, then it would be a trouble for us. Along with these two, if they get a number of small shareholders, which I believe they already have, they can challenge us and might win too.”

“What if we get small shareholders on our side and leave these?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“They are powerful ones and they are the ones who will try to get the control over Lu corporation and those small shareholders are no big to divert them on either side,” Xiao Min replied.

“What is the second way?”

“Second way is when everyone votes irrespective of the percentage of the shares they hold and only the number of votes would be counted. The side, with more votes, will get the authority.”

“If we get only these two to strengthen our side with shareholding percent, then how are we going to deal if they do it with a second way. For that, we need the number of people instead of a percentage of shares.”

“There are small scale shareholders on our side but if we get the support from the shareholders, who are out of china, then it will solve the second problem.”

“We can send uncle Lu Chen out of China to meet all those people but after that what can we do to get the result of the meeting in our favor as we don’t have a strong candidate to take Lu Qiang’s position?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“I have a plan only if you agree and only if we can get those two on our side, even if it means by force. We can get the things in our favor for the time being and that way we can buy more time to plan properly.”

## 683 Planning...

Jiang Yuyan looked at San Zemin, who was sitting silently beside Xiao Min. “San Zemin, what weakness do these two have?”

“They have no such a definite weakness to catch them with, that’s why those two are fearless,” San Zemin replied.

“This can’t be true. I need each and every information about them as fast as you can. Not a minor detail should be left out,” Jiang Yuyan instructed.

“I have it. I will show you right away,” informing me, San Zemin went to the worktable behind Jiang Yuyan. Turning on the laptop and the projector, San Zemin signalled them to look at the white screen hanging on the wall opposite to Jiang Yuyan.

The projector reflected a picture of one man in his late forties, wearing a black suit, the brown hair with a bald patch in the middle of the head, average height, had glasses with a thick black rectangular frame. San Zemin continued telling his boss the information about the person as Xiao Min and the butler already knew about him.

“This person is Mr. Yun Shen, one of those two we need support from. He has no family and lives alone while enjoying his money and power. He loves to party and show off his wealth, walks around with his bodyguards everywhere. Not having a family made him free from worrying about anything and made him act recklessly all the time. He is not scared of anything as he knows even if he loses everything, he still can manage to live nicely till his last day.”

San Zemin said as he continued showing the person’s pictures at the various occasions that showed his lifestyle and daily routine. The pictures such as being in pubs and parties surrounded by women, going out while surrounded by his bodyguards, meeting with other businessmen. There were so

many pictures which showed he was being unusually closer to the women.

“Is he a womaniser?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes, he is and everyone knows about it. He is shameless to show it in front of everyone in parties,” San Zemin replied.

“He must have asked for women frequently?” Jiang Yuyan commented.

“Yes, and the one who provides him, different women, is the same woman involved with an accident of boss,” San Zemin added.

“Hmm, no family, no fear but crazy for women.” Jiang Yuyan commented, and others nodded.

Jiang Yuyan looked at the butler, who was sitting there too. He was sitting in one chair observing the pictures on the white screen.

“Ye Bai,” Jiang Yuyan called him. As he looked at her, she instructed, “For this, I will need your help.”

The butler nodded and Jiang Yuyan asked him, “What do you think?”

“When the person fears nothing, he fears only one thing?” the butler replied and one corner of Jiang Yuyan’s lips curved up.

The other two thought about what their boss had planned and what the butler meant. seeing them puzzled, the butler spoke, “You will get to know about it soon.”

San Zemin then changed the pictures that showed the other person who was in mid forties, handsome man with blond hair and good physic.

San Zemin continued explaining.

“He is the second person we need, Mr. Wen Tao. He too has no such family other than his one daughter who just entered the university this year. His wife left him last year and remarried to another man and they have no contact with each other.”

“What was the reason for divorce?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she examined the pictures.

“The reason no one knows, but they broke up on mutual agreement without creating a scene. I think it must be because of their daughter that they parted away in peace,” San Zemin replied.

Saying San Zemin continued changing the pictures, which included Wen Tao, his wife and the daughter. In pictures three together looked like a content family and hard to believe they were not together. Later all the pictures of Wen Tao were with his daughter only, celebrating her birthday, together at her highschool graduation day along with her friends, doing gardening together in their home and both father-daughter looked so happy together. One could see how much Wen Tao loved his daughter.

“I am not in a mood to use such a cute and nice girl as his weakness,” Jiang Yuyan commented and others thought the same. The innocent girl looked so happy, devoid of all the worries in the world and it looked like for her, her father was the best person in the world.

Just then Jiang Yuyan noticed something in the pictures, “Go a few pictures back. Show me again from his daughter’s pictures.”

San Zemin did what his boss asked and Jiang Yuyan continued looking at the pictures carefully while others did the same.

“Who is that person in the picture?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Seems like his daughter’s friend,” the butler replied and San Zemin nodded, “Yes.”

“Get your men and get all the information about that friend. I am sure we will get something useful,” Jiang Yuyan instructed, and others got the hint of what their boss was thinking about.

San Zemin instructed his men about what to do while Jiang Yuyan looked at Xiao Min, “We will settle these two now what had left?”

“We need to send uncle Lu Chen to get those foreign shareholders. I have arranged everything already. We can send him today itself with the company’s private jet and my father can accompany him,” Xiao Min suggested.

“Hmm, do it.” Permitting him Jiang Yuyan asked, “What comes next?”

“Our first plan is to get the result of the board meeting in our favour or dismiss it to borrow time,” replied Xiao Min.

“What’s the probability?”

“Getting it completely into our favour would be difficult until we get these two people on our side, but we can shock them all with a few things that might lead them to arrange it for a second time. It will also help to move a few people on our side by creating a fear of the power of the rightful owner.”

## 684 Rightful Owner...

“Rightful owner,” Jiang Yuyan mumbled as she thought about something and nodding Xiao Min continued, “Yes, and we can use this opportunity to check the water to know who is in our favor and who is ready to betray us.”

Jiang Yuyan agreed, “Hmm, we will go according to what you have planned as we have just three days left to prepare.”

That evening, Lu Chen left China along with Xiao Dong to visit the shareholder on foreign land and to get the signatures from them on the papers that showed whom they are siding with. He had three days to return with everything while Jiang Yuyan and San Zemin started the preparation from their side.

---

The next day...

After breakfast, Lu Lijun got ready to go to the school on his own and Jiang Yuyan was happy that he did it even without her asking him to do it. Not just Jiang Yuyan but also Ning Jiahui was relieved seeing it.

Jiang Yuyan took him to the school in her car, which was ready along with the driver. On the way, Jiang Yuyan thought to praise Lu Lijun for his decision to resume schooling.

“It’s good that you decide to go back to school.”

Lu Lijun was looking out of the window when she said it. Looked like he was thinking about something and turned his face to look at her as he asked, “Are you happy?”

It startled Jiang Yuyan as he talked when she expected to get his silence in the reply. Also, his question that he asked if she was happy, puzzled her too.

“Of course, I am. Why won’t I be happy when it’s something good for you?” Jiang Yuyan replied.

“If that’s what makes you happy.” Saying Lu Lijun turned back to look outside of the windows and Jiang Yuyan didn’t

disturb him.

Jiang Yuyan thought he was ready to go back to school because she mentioned his elder brother when she was trying to convince him the previous night, but little did she know that Lu Lijun just heard only words when she said- I will be happy.

For Lu Lijun, whatever that would make Jiang Yuyan happy, he was ready to do it.

When they arrived at the school, Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the car to see him off. When they reached the gate, Jiang Yuyan informed, "I will be here to pick you up in the evening." Patting his head, Jiang Yuyan turned to leave, but Lu Lijun held her hand to stop her.

The moment she looked at him, Lu Lijun tiptoed and pecked her on the cheek as he said, "See you in the evening."

Surprised with his action, Jiang Yuyan hummed lightly. It was not the first time when he did it, but the only thing that startled Jiang Yuyan was the sudden change in Lu Lijun.

When she didn't expect him to say anything, he talked. When she thought he will just leave silently, he reacted and pecked on her cheeks. This all was so sudden that surprised her, but she felt glad he had responded and reacted because during these days he was silent, hardly spoke a few words in an entire day, he never smiled and looked serious all the time.

---

The three days passed, and finally, it was the day of the board meeting.

All the board members were present in the Lu corporation's head office. Lu Chen came back to China the previous night as he managed to get the signatures of most of the shareholders.

Xiao Min and Jiang Yuyan prepared the plan as suggested by Xiao Min and his father Xiao Dong while Lu Chen approved it too and he was confident that it will work.

The meeting held in the conference hall. It was the huge space that had the tables and the chairs arranged in a semicircle in front of the small stage. There were ten board members and



others were the major shareholders who needed to be present in the meeting.

The person who was leading the meeting was Li Yong, the person who was eyeing the president's position in the Lu Corporation. A tall man in mid-thirties who had achieved a lot to make him qualified for the position, not to forget being one of the major shareholders.

He was supporting Chairman Lu Jinhai's dismissal as few of them had planned who would be the next chairman and that was Fu Jing, one of Lu Jinhai's trusted men, but who was about to betray him. Li Yong was Fu Jing's trusted man and once he had got Chairman's position, they had a deal that Li Yong would be the next president.

Fu Jing was confident that he would get the Chairman's position as there were low chances of Lu Jianhai waking up ever and being the most powerful among the board members other than Lu Jinhai and Lu Qiang, made him qualified for the position, not forget his sharp brain which scared rest of the members.

The meeting was about to be started and Lu Chen was somewhat worried, though he trusted their plan. Xiao Dong assured him to not worry. Lu Chen was afraid to let down his elder brother, who must think his younger brother would do his best to protect what belonged to them.

The meeting started as Li Yong asked everyone's attention while standing behind the dais on the stage.

“Thank you very much, everyone, for coming here to contribute to such an important decision-making event for our company. I hope we all take decisions solely based on benefiting this company and not based on any personal interest and emotions related to someone.”

Everyone in the conference hall paid attention to it. Not just board members but the major shareholders present there were excited about this new change too.

Fu Jing, the man as the same age of Lu Jinhai and once Lu Jinhai's trusted man was sitting in front with his loyal men on

his side, those were hoping Fu Jing to be next Chairman. Most of of them were against Lu Jinhai and a few were just greedy for more.

# 685 Most Important Person...

“Mr. Fu Jing, you are the future of this company. Since how long we were waiting for this day when chairman Lu Jinhai would be out of our sights,” the one man said just to please Fu Jing to get on his good side.

“I understand your intentions but you should not disrespect our ex-chairman,” Fu Ling commented.

Though it looked like he was confronting the man, his intentions were something else as he already called Lu Jinhai an ex-chairman even before his dismissal.

“I understand, Chairman Fu Jing,” the man said as both smiled mischievously looking at each other.

In the same front row Lu Chen and Xiao-Dong were sitting. It divided the entire hall into two groups as the people sat behind those whom they supported while a few were neutral who sat in the middle on the last seats. They were here to enjoy the show and to follow whoever they found powerful, and they had nothing to do personally with anyone.

“So the gentleman, today’s meeting is about the dismissal of Chairman Lu Jinhai and the appointment of the new Chairman.” Li Yong announced as he looked at Fu Jing, the sure candidate for the next chairman position.

Looking at everyone, Li Yong continued, “We all know Chairman Lu Jinhai is in the vegetative state and he is not in a condition to lead the company. From our heart, we all wish him to get well but now looking at the condition in the company it would be bad to wait until he wakes up and even if he wakes up, we should let Chairman Lu Jinhai rest and mourn over his son’s death. It’s our time to let him rest and support him by sharing his responsibilities.”

Everyone was hearing Li Yong's speech carefully. It was well written but behind those caring words was hidden his self motive that everyone could see. There was nothing to mind as it was the normal thing in the business world. One's demise was someone else's rise.

"We would conduct it in two steps of voting. First voting would be to decide the dismissal of the current chairman and second voting would be for appointing for the new chairman. We have one box here," Li Yong said as he pointed towards one box which was kept on the table that was placed in front of the stage.

"If you agreed with Chairman Lu Jinhai's dismissal, then you have to write Yes and if not then you have to write No. we can start the procedure."

Saying, Li Yong signaled others to vote. Just then the door of the conference room opened and Xiao Min entered inside. Everyone looked at him as he bowed and said, "My apology for the interruption, but I have something to say before this voting procedure starts."

"We can talk after we have done the voting procedure as it's not a nice thing to keep others waiting. They all are busy," Li Yong countered as he knew there must be something that Xiao Min brought which could ruin his plan.

"It won't take much time as it's about the voting procedure itself which would help it go even smoother," said Xiao Min as he went up at the stage and unwillingly Li Yong had to give him a space because they were standing in front of the important people.

Xiao Min was younger than all the people present there, but he was the president's personal assistant and was aware of most of the things in the company. He was the person who was best in his work and he earned the respect for himself at a young age with the knowledge and experience he had.

Looking at everyone in front, Xiao Min spoke. "In this such important decision-making process, we are missing out on the important person who is the most powerful among us all and can lead this company in the future."

With these words, the people who planned everything felt shocked and nervous but waited to see who was the person that was held the such a power to dominate them all.

“Please welcome, Mrs. Lu Qiang,” Xiao Min announced.

The door of the conference hall opened and everyone’s curious gazes stuck in the direction. First San Zemin entered the room who led the way for Jiang Yuyan and two of San Zemin’s men followed her.

Everyone looked at Jiang Yuyan in a shock. First, they didn’t expect to see her there as it was not much time passed since the tragedy happened and second she was there with San Zemin and his men so the meaning of it was clear to everyone. Jiang Yuyan not only got Lu Qiang’s wealth and a huge part of shares that would challenge anyone there but also she got his another power that would shut everyone.

She was one of the biggest shareholders in the company now, and her opinion mattered as well. When others thought the newly wedded young girl would be mourning over her husband’s death and what can she know about the business, she suddenly showed up to shock them.

Jiang Yuyan stood in front of everyone as she bowed lightly to greet them, and her sight passed across the entire conference hall. She was wearing a black corporate style dress, full sleeves, V-neckline, the left side of the dress moved to the right from the shoulder which then overlapped with the right side part which moved to the left.

The cuffs at the sleeves folded up to give it a distinct look, a thin black belt around the waist. The lower half was pencil fit, which was long up to her knees and wore the matching black heels with it. Her hair left open, parted at one side and hair locks hanging in front of both the shoulders. The face kept a natural look with just nude lip gloss while the ears had a black stud which stood out with her black dress.

## 686 Her Intimidating Presence...

Jiang Yuyan carried a royal aura that showed she was the wife of one royal person. This young girl looked impressive not just because of what she wore but the attitude she carried and that calm look in her eyes were intimidating to make others feel that she was not any ordinary woman. The similar thing they all observed in Lu Qiang, and now his wife was the same. Everyone was surprised as she looked confident and there was not even a tinge of sadness that showed this woman lost her husband just a few days back.

Fu Jing got up from his seat and went to welcome Jiang Yuyan pretending to be good but his intentions were to indicate that she was just a guest who will pass by soon but this was where he was wrong. Li Yong stepped down from the stage and went to join Fu Jing.

“Welcome Mrs. Lu. We didn’t know you were going to bless this place with your presence. Please have a seat,” Fu Jing greeted her.

Jiang Yuyan knew this man was fake, but for the time being she thought to just be silent and observe everyone.

Fu Jing led her way towards the chairs, but ignoring him, Jiang Yuyan straightaway went towards Lu Chen. Greeting Lu Chen with a smile, she sat beside him that showed they were family and Lu family still exist there.

Lu Chen was happy to see Jiang Yuyan as he could see how few people’s faces fell down seeing her there. She was obviously the strong candidate for the president’s position that made few people insecure, not to forget she controlled San Zemin’s side too.

“How come San Zemin is with her suddenly?” Fu Jing asked Li Yong, who was surprised too.

“She is just one young girl, who knows nothing about the business so we need not fear her,” Li Yong suggested.

“Mr. Li Yong is right, and she has no one to support as the person who could support her is bedridden,” one of the supporters of Fu Jing added.

“It’s okay if she has Lu Qiang’s shares and we can brush her off saying it’s not enough to be qualified but if she really had that power, people might side with her being scared,” Li Yong suggested.

Before they could discuss further, Xiao Min continued. “There is one more thing I would like to inform you all on behalf of Mrs Lu.”

Everyone looked at Xiao Min as he continued, “Mr. Chairman is in better condition and he can regain consciousness anytime soon.”

This was the one more blow for the opposite side people while Lu Jinhai’s loyal supporters were happy. Fu Jing looked at Li Yong and others. Understanding it, Li Yong went to Xiao Min to take his place in front of the dais.

“It’s a great news and we all are happy to know it,” Li Yong said, pulling out a fake smile on his lips. “Now we can start the voting as everyone is busy here and we should not waste their time. So I will request assistant Xiao Min to have a seat and not to elongate the procedure.”

It scared the other side that the news of Lu Jinhai’s better condition might make them lose the votes, so tried to suppress it until the voting procedure finished.

Though Xiao Min held a lower position than others, he was one righteous man. When his own boss never looked down at him, then the others had no right to do so.

“Mr Li Yong, the things I am here to say are all important too and I am saying it on the behalf of my boss. I don’t think....”

“I think Mr. Xiao Min is forgetting who he is,” Li Yong said, interrupting Xiao Min.

They wanted to finish the voting procedure first, and later they thought to deal with Jiang Yuyan. Once Fu Jing became a Chairman, it was easy to deal with others.

Xiao Min was there on the behalf of his boss. If he had called someone, his boss that meant the person he was referring to was ready to take Lu Qiang's position in the company. It was clear that the person was none other than Jiang Yuyan.

Fu Jing already signalled Li Yong to shut Xiao Min as he didn't want Xiao Min to declare who his boss would be which might create the problem in their plan. It might make Jiang Yuyan's presence known instead of just a guest, which they wanted to turn her into. Xiao Min was loyal to his previous boss, and it was not easy for anyone to make him call someone as his boss just like that.

Li Yong was eyeing on making Xiao Min his assistant as getting recognition from Xiao Min as a boss was important to get the position of president. He knew it would help him in making others recognise him as the one and without any obstacle, he would be the president.

Before Xiao Min could say anything further, Jiang Yuyan stood up from her place as she looked at Xiao Min and just from her sight, Xiao Min understood what his boss wanted. Xiao Min kept quiet, and everyone looked at Jiang Yuyan, who stood up and stepped towards the stage.

“Click-Clack!! Click-Clack!!”

The staccato clicks of her high heels echoed in the conference room with her each step forward. San Zemin, who was standing on one side near his boss, followed her too.

Stepping up on the stage, Jiang Yuyan said, “I hope Mr....” Jiang Yuyan acted as if she didn't know his name. “I am sorry, I am new here and in a brief period I could remember only important people's names here.”

It upset Li Yong but he couldn't say anything as it was the truth that Jiang Yuyan was new there and she hardly came across them in one or two parties that she attended with Lu Qiang. Like the wives of other businessmen, Jiang Yuyan



never tried to meddle in business or never tried to mark her presence everywhere.

## 687 Fear Of Power...

“Li Yong.” The man told his name to Jiang Yuyan while others were looking at them.

“Mr Li Yong, I hope you don’t have any problem with my position and won’t stop me from talking to my people here,” Jiang Yuyan said that everyone heard clearly.

She called them as my people so it was clear that she already considered herself above everyone and she was ready to get everything in her hand as a boss.

“You are mistaken, Mrs. Lu. I was just....”

“Click!!!”

Li Yong stopped as San Zemin pulled out his gun and readied it to shoot while still pointing it towards the floor.

“Click!! Click!!”

Again two guns were ready to shoot, which belonged to the two men who followed Jiang Yuyan. Hearing their boss’s gun getting ready to shoot, San Zemin’s two men were ready too.

In a black suit while wearing a black Polaroid and an earpiece attached to his ear, San Zemin was standing beside his boss, his face expressionless that clearly passed a message to the person in front- don’t get in my boss’s way.

San Zemin and his men were the independent authority that was created only to protect their boss. They had a right to ignore others and look into their boss’s safety only and to make sure no one could bother their boss. If there was something that went against their boss’s will and someone intentionally tried to be an obstacle, San Zemin had a right to take an action even if it was killing the person at the very moment.

The choice of deciding the severity of the situation was completely in San Zemin’s hand, and the boss too had no say in this matter. If San Zemin did something, no one could say

anything in it as it was the rule known to everyone associated with the Lu corporation. If they face the strict action from San Zemin, then it was their own responsibility.

Knowing what San Zemin meant when he pulled out his gun, Li Yong stepped aside to make way for Jiang Yuyan towards the dais and went back to Fu Jing.

San Zemin had no intentions to shoot the person for such a minor reason, but his intention was to make everyone aware of Jiang Yuyan's presence and her power.

Xiao Min adjusted the mike for Jiang Yuyan as she stood in front of it. Xiao Min shifted to one side while San Zemin stood behind her, two steps back.

The other two men, who followed Jiang Yuyan, stood at either side of the stage while facing the people sitting on the chairs. With this, everyone could sense the power this woman got. She didn't have to tell her men what to do, and they were ready to do anything for her without her saying a word.

Jiang Yuyan started. "As my assistant Xiao Min said, Mr. Chairman would be awake soon and he would be here among us in no time. When he would be here, he would be happy to see his people caring and supporting him and I am sure all of your efforts won't be a waste as Mr Chairman will make sure to pay back you all."

With these words, the supporters of Lu Jinhai were happy, but it scared the betrayers. Her words that he will pay back you all were sweet, but there was a threat behind it. They all knew, if Lu Jinhai came back to his position, he would make it difficult for them as a reward of betraying him.

"Also, I am not here to stop this voting process but I am here to support it. I will show you something to prove how much I valued this voting process."

As Jiang Yuyan said it, two women employees entered the room carrying the bunch of papers with them and passed those papers to everyone present in the conference room. As they started to look into the papers, Jiang Yuyan spoke.

“In such an important process, how could we forget the shareholders who are out from China as they are an important part of this company too. They all have signed the documents saying they will support the Chairman.”

Everyone looked into the papers. It shocked Fu Jing and his men as they never thought Lu Jinhai’s side will prepare for this in such a short notice. Seeing Jiang Yuyan there was already a shock for them as they thought Lu Chen was the only person from the Lu family and he won’t be able to manage everything and they will get the things in their favor so easily.

Jiang Yuyan noticed everyone as they went through the papers and said, “And now it’s the turn for you all to decide what is good for this company and what is best for you.”

Her last words were the threat with sugar-coated words and those who should understand it, got the meaning.

“Now I request you all to start the voting process,” said Jiang Yuyan and just then one supporter of Lu Jinhai, who was of a similar age as him, got up from his chair.

“The purpose of this meeting was to dismiss the current chairman as he was in vegetative state but as we got to know his condition is fine now, there is no need for voting. We all know, no one can lead this company better than Chairman Lu Jinhai so we should just wait for him to come here soon,” The man suggested and all the supporters agreed with him by saying yes loudly.

Those who were not on any particular side could see at what side the weight of power was heavy and they too supported Lu Jinhai.

Jiang Yuyan’s intention was to show off the power and make them think twice about which side they should support, and she was somewhat successful with it. With the signed papers from the shareholders from foreign countries, she was ready to get more votes on her side. She was sure a few people will change their sides from Fu Jing to Lu Jinhai with the fear she created and it would make their side stronger.

## 688 Stepped Into The Trap...

Fu Jing, who knew he would lose this battle, stood up from his place and spoke, “I agree that the chairman is in good condition but we need him to be well enough to lead this company. I just need an answer, till when would he be back?”

With this, Li Yong stood up too and sided with Fu Jing. “I agree with this. We need the chairman who can work.” Others on their side agreed too.

Jiang Yuyan was ready for this. Xiao Min attached the USB to the laptop present at the table on the stage that was attached to the projector. Everyone looked at the screen and there was a report that the doctor made about the improvement of Lu Jinhai’s condition that stated he would be fine completely in a month.

“I think it should not be a big deal for us to wait for him just for a month as he is the one who created this empire by spending so many months of his life working to his bones,” Jiang Yuyan asked which was more like an order instead of a question.

“And what if he can’t make it after a month, then?” Fu Jing asked.

“Then, we can always conduct the same meeting but with the candidate who really deserves to be the next Chairman,” Jiang Yuyan replied, which was offending for Fu Jing as she was calling him non-deserving in front of everyone.

“We are ready to wait for a month,” the supporters of Lu Jinhai spoke and most of the others who were on neutral side nodded too knowing Lu Jinhai’s capability.

Fu Jing had no other choice but to wait for a month and pray that Lu Jinhai won’t wake up. He didn’t want to lose this young woman in front of him so easily, so Fu Jing came up with another plan.

“As the lady is here to decide, I want to know what Mrs. Lu thinks about the president’s position. I am sure Mrs. Lu is not planning to appoint any inexperienced person in the president’s chair,” Fu Jing commented as he smirked.

Smiling at it, Jiang Yuyan replied, “If I would think about the deserving candidate with the most experience here who knows everything about the president’s work and how to handle everything, I find Xiao Min the most suitable person. He is the one who worked for really hard instead of just passing the orders.”

These words shocked everyone, including Xiao Min. He didn’t expect his boss to say this, but he felt glad that his hard work was being recognized even after his previous boss was not there.

Jiang Yuyan understood, Fu Jing’s words were directed towards her as he was sure she would claim the president’s place but little did he know that she didn’t plan to be one. She was there just to secure the Chairman’s position. Jiang Yuyan accepted his words and thought to mock him instead of showing she was not interested. The way her presence scared them, she was enjoying it.

Li Yong was the most annoyed person with this statement from Jiang Yuyan and spoke, “Mrs. Lu, this can’t...”

“Hear me out first, Mr. Li Yong,” Jiang Yuyan interrupted Li Yong as if he was no one important.

Jiang Yuyan continued, “I was just giving an example of the deserving candidate according to the criteria of experience and if that is what Mr. Fu Jing wants, I don’t have any objection in making Xiao Min a president.”

“Mrs. Lu, it doesn’t work like this. To make someone president, you need board members’ support. Only one person can’t decide it. Also, Xiao Min can’t be the candidate as there are people sitting here who have power in the hands to lead the company.”

“Mr. Fu is right,” said Li Yong

“Yes, we agree with Mr. Fu,” other supporters of Fu Jing said together.

Jiang Yuyan smiled lightly as what she was expecting from these people was coming out and these people were going to be caught in their own trap.

“So what do you suggest, Fu Jing?” Lu Chen asked, knowing this was the opportunity to make Fu Jing say for what they had planned everything.

“Only the board of directors will decide who the next president would be. We have a total of twelve boards of directors and the person will get the position with the majority support,” Fu Jing spoke and his supporters agreed with him by saying yes in unanimously.

“That’s it?” Lu Chen asked, carrying a mischievous smile showing he was happy with what Fu Jing said.

Fu Jing noticed it and felt confused. Lu Chen who was one calm person and when Fu Jing thought Lu Chen wouldn’t be able to do much, he looked confident and he even went out of China to get the shareholders on their side.

Fu Jing sensed there was something not right and spoke again, “But there is a minor change in it.”

Everyone looked at Fu Jing and he noticed Lu Chen’s expressions changed from glad to tensed that boosted Fu Jing’s confidence and he spoke.

“This time the number of votes won’t be considered but the percentage of shares each director has will matter. The side that will get support from the highest percentage of shares will win.”

The moment Fu Jing said it, Lu Chen’s expression’s turned even tensed, Jiang Yuyan stood silent with neutral expressions. Xiao Min and Xiao Dong both looked tense too.

Seeing this, Fu Jing was sure he did the right thing. Little did he know, he just stepped into the trap set by Jiang Yuyan and her people.

“So, I hope Mr. Lu Chen and Mrs. Lu won’t mind it,” Fu Jing asked.

Before Lu Chen and Jiang Yuyan could say anything, the supporters of Fu Jing agreed with him. “Mr. Fu is right.”

“Yes, the position of president should go to the person who has power behind him,” Li Yong said.

“We should not wait for it long. As everyone is here, I would like it to conduct in next two days,” Fu Jing suggested and everyone nodded.

“What do you think, Mr. Lu Chen?” Li Yong asked as he smiled mischievously.

“If that’s what everyone wants,” Lu Chen agreed.

Finally, it was decided to conduct the appointment of a new president in the next two days.



## 689 Angry Lu Chen...

The propaganda for the dismissal of the current Chairman had been canceled. Jiang Yuyan's side was relieved while Fu Jing's side was equally upset with it. As they lost the battle for the Chairman's position, there was no way Fu Jing and his dogs will let go the position of President.

Fu Jing's first plan was to get the Chairman's position and later it would be easy to get the president's one. Now the plan had changed. They first had to get the President's position on their side and later aim for the Chairman's position. Fu Jing hoped, even though Lu Jinhai made it back, he won't be able to handle the responsibility of Chairman after such a severe accident.

After everything was clear, Jiang Yuyan stepped down from the stage and went to Lu Chen while Xiao Min and San Zemin followed her.

"You did well," Lu Chen commented, and Jiang Yuyan just nodded.

It amazed Lu Chen how well Jiang Yuyan handled it, even though she was new to everyone and those she was dealing with were troublesome people and had experience of several years.

"Boss, sure was so impressive," Xiao Min commented and Xiao Dong and Lu Chen nodded.

They all didn't look much excited and kept it low, even though things went according to their way.

Fu Jing's side was happy with the last outcome even though the start didn't go according to their plan.

Fu Jing was sure that next battle he would win as he had most board members siding with him as they too were waiting to snatch the power from Lu Family. Moreover, Fu Jiang had two people on his side, which were the aces for him, Yun Shen and

Wen Tao. Together these two could change the fate of the side they supported.

These two were the one Xiao Min asked Jiang Yuyan to get on their side. Not just being major shareholders, but having them on their side was a major advantage to take control over so many important people and the things related to the business.

Slowly most of the people left the conference hall one by one after greeting each other.

“Boss, would you like to visit the office?” Xiao Min asked, his intentions were to let more people realise Jiang Yuyan’s presence in the company as he was sure she would be the next president though Jiang Yuyan didn’t want it.

“President’s office only,” Jiang Yuyan instructed.

Xiao Min understood what she wanted and led her way out of the conference room while San Zemina and his men followed her.

As they stepped out of the conference room, Li Yong, Wen Tao and Yun Shen were standing outside while talking to a few of their people. When they saw Jiang Yuyan coming out of the conference hall, all looked at her shamefully the way men usually looked down on the woman.

“Pretty women should be home as it’s not safe for them to wander around and especially those who have no man in life,” Yun Shen, the womaniser man who had no respect for women commented that clearly heard by Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan continued walking, not paying attention to them and instructed her men, “Ignore them.”

“You are right, Mr. Yun Shen,” the other one added as they laughed.

“Don’t be sad Yun Shen, it’s good for you if such women exist around as you never know you might get to be friends with them,” said Wen Tao and he smiled looking at Jiang Yuyan.

It was the circular patch of the corridor they were crossing so they had to hear everything till they crossed it and waited for

the elevator to arrive. Being the huge and silent space, what those men were saying echoed loudly and clearly.

“You are right, Wen Tao and now I think, such things are even better to see in my bed only,” Yun Shen laughed.

San Zemin, who tolerated this jerks because of his boss’s order, couldn’t tolerate it anymore. He was about to pull out his gun but Jiang Yuyan strictly spoke, “I said No.”

San Zemin had no option but to put his gun back unwillingly.

“They will get what they deserve, just bear it for a while,” Xiao Min instructed to San Zemin even though he himself wanted to strangle the bastards who insulted their boss. Xiao Min always thought rationally, as he knew patience and proper planning would be the key.

They stepped inside the elevator to go to the floor of Lu Qiang’s office. Before the door of the elevator could close completely, Jiang Yuyan observed the men who laughed at her, her sight showing they had just provoked the devil.

When Jiang Yuyan left, Lu Chen who had stepped out of the conference room went to the men standing there. “Yun Shen, I would like to have a word with you, alone.”

Yun Shen and others smiled, thinking Lu Chen will beg him to support him.

“Why not, Mr. Lu Chen?”

As Yun Shen agreed, Lu Chen led his way towards the washroom that was nearby. Xiao Dong made sure no one was inside the washroom and stood out to check no one should disturb these two as he already guessed why Lu Chen wanted to talk to Yun Shen.

When they entered the washroom, Yun Shen asked, “So what’s the matter, Mr. Lu Chen? Are you expecting to get any help from me? If so, then...”

“Punch!!”

Before Yun Shen could finish his line, he tasted iron in his mouth and felt like his left molars left loose.

In a shock, Yun Shen exclaimed while covering his left cheek with his palm, “What the hell, Mr. Lu Chen? How dare....”

Again, Yun Shen could finish his lines, Lu Chen held his collar and pressed him against the walls as he warned, “Seems like you will like me to bring up the woman’s death case a year back which happened in your farmhouse.”

Hearing it, Yun Shen’s eyes left wide open in a shock, “W-What are you talking about....”

“Don’t act in front of me,” Lu Chen warned again as he stared coldly in Yun Shen’s eyes.

Yun Shen who was laughing a while ago, looked scared and Lu Chen continued, “The woman you were passing comments a while ago, is my daughter and if I ever hear anything disgusting about her, you will see yourself behind the bars.”

—

Today is reset for votes, so don’t forget to vote. The next chapter would be here but it will depend on the number of votes. If we get 2K votes in a day, there would be a bonus chapter.

## 690 The Next Plan...

Lu Chen's words scared Yun Shen and the most shocking thing was, not even in his dream he expected Lu Chen to be this fierce. When Lu Chen should have begged for help, he preferred to beat the person who could help him.

"L-Lu Chen, I was just..."

"I am not here to take bullshit from you, Yun Shen. I might not be good with business, but I am good with pulling out someone's eyes that lay a disgusting sight on my family.," Lu Chen declared and let go of Yun Shen by pushing him like a piece of trash.

Yun Shen collected himself as he stood straight. "Mr. Lu Chen..."

"I am not done talking yet." Interrupting, Yun Shen, Lu Chen continued as he stood in front of Yun Shen with his head high. "My brother let you off the hook with that woman's case because her family pleaded to my brother to not make it public as they didn't want people to know about what happened with their daughter, but I am not my brother, remember it."

"I-I am sorry...I...."

Before Yun Shen could say further, Lu Chen stepped out of the washroom where Xiao Dong was waiting for him. Lu Chen went to the elevator to go to his office as Xiao Dong asked, "Are you fine?"

Lu Chen nodded, "Hmm! Should have punched him a few more times."

Xiao Dong smiled seeing Lu Chen like this and appreciated how protective Lu Chen was towards Jiang Yuyan.

Their plan was successful so they could relax. They intentionally didn't let others know about the arrival of Jiang Yuyan. If they had informed it beforehand, the opposite side would have prepared for it, but Jiang Yuyan and Xiao Min didn't want to give them that chance. When the people are

shocked and not prepared for the sudden change of situation, it is given that they will end up doing the things we want and the same thing happens. Now it was time for Jiang Yuyan to get their Plan B ready.

Jiang Yuyan went to Lu Qiang's office.

"If the boss needs something, let me know," Xiao Min informed.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan entered inside while Xiao Min and San Zemin stayed outside.

Jiang Yuyan spent her time inside the office while remembering the old days. All those memories flashed in front of her eyes that could make her cry any moment but she had decided to not cry until she accomplished what she had decided and that was to fulfill Lu Qiang's dreams.

Jiang Yuyan stood in front of the vast glass window behind Lu Qiang's chair and continued looking out. Lu Qiang often stood there and looked out. She tried to figure out what Lu Qiang used to look at and observe as she tried to feel his presence in everything.

Jiang Yuyan sat in Lu Qiang's chair and looked at the things on the table. There was a photo frame that had her and Lu Qiang's picture together. Picking it up, she caressed Lu Qiang's picture with her thumb as a light smile painted on her lips, remembering that day when they took the picture. In that picture, both of them were facing the camera, smiling and Lu Qiang holding her closer by his hand on her waist. It was a random picture they clicked in casual clothes but both looked happy together.

Keeping the picture back, Jiang Yuyan pressed the button on the worktable and went to sit on the couch. Xiao Min and San Zemin entered the office after knocking once. The button she pressed was to call for someone. She knew it because she saw Lu Qiang doing it so many times.

"Have a seat," Jiang Yuyan instructed, and both sat opposite to her. Just then there was a knock on the door and Lu Chen entered the office along with Xiao Dong.

when they sat on the couch, Jiang Yuyan noticed her uncle's knuckles were unusually red and asked, "Is your hand okay, uncle?"

"It's fine. I must have hurt it by mistake...."

Jiang Yuyan didn't ask further, though she could see it was not just like that.

Without them asking anything, Jiang Yuyan asked, "Are you sure we need to get those two bastards on our side?"

"Yes," Xiao Min said confidently.

"What if we directly get Fu Jing on our side as anyway, we have to be bad to get them," Jiang Yuyan asked knowing Fu Jing was the real troublemaker and the powerful one.

This time Xiao Dong, who was much more experienced and who had been with Lu Jinhai since his starting days, answered, "Mr. Fu Jing is a powerful person after Mr. Chairman. He can act to be on our side and later he can betray us as he has the contacts at the top level and there were so many powerful people behind him who are waiting to get Lu Corporation away from Lu Family."

"So?" Jiang Yuyan asked

Lu Chen understood, he needed to make Jiang Yuyan understand it clearly and spoke, "The best way to defeat such a person is through the way he himself suggested, the legal way by challenging him. He was the one to decide it and if he loses the battle legally, then he won't have any face to challenge us. Moreover, to show our side stronger, it's always best to win against the strongest one that no one can point a finger on our success. Having a strong opponent and winning against him is always the best for the reputation."

Giving out a deep sigh, Jiang Yuyan mumbled, "It would be better to put a gun on his temple and finish it all at once."

San Zemin wanted to do the same as his boss, but Xiao Min thought otherwise.

Xiao Min noticed how annoyed his boss was getting with this all, but he could understand she was not in a condition to stress

out herself.

“Boss can rest for a while after having lunch and we can discuss it later,” Xiao Min suggested.

Jiang Yuyan looked at her wristwatch and it was indeed the lunchtime. Though she didn't feel like eating anything, she decided against it and asked to get lunch for her. She knew it was important to pay attention to her health if she wanted to accomplish her plan and there was no space for falling sick. Moreover, she was worried that Ning Jiahui and Lu Lijun wouldn't allow her to step out of the home again for a week.



# 691 Don't Make Me Repeat...

They all had lunch together as Jiang Yuyan had something to discuss with them. They had to plan how to get Wen Tao and Yun Shen under them.

For Jiang Yuyan, each passing moment was important. She wanted to finish everything as fast as she could so that she could find more time for Lu Lijun. These days Jiang could not give Lu Lijun much time and she could feel he was not happy, though he never showed it clearly.

Even though Jiang Yuyan was home for some time, she had to spend her time studying about the Lu Corporation and everything related to it as she didn't have much time so it was difficult for her to give Lu Lijun a time like before.

Jiang Yuyan thought about Lu Lijun, who was in the school, and she wondered if he had his lunch.

When she dropped him at the school before coming to the office, he was silent as usual and acted what he did on the first day of the school when he surprised Jiang Yuyan by pecking on her cheek followed by - see you in the evening. He looked unusually calm and Jiang Yuyan thought about what problem he must have. She thought to ask him about it.

After lunch, they all sat in the office to discuss the next plan. For Yun Shen, Jiang Yuyan already had thought about something but she was waiting for her men to get the information about one person related to Wen Tao and his daughter.

"We can get our plan for Yun Shen done tonight," San Zemin suggested.

"Is everything ready?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

San Zemin nodded. "Yes."

Lu Chen was sitting silent as he couldn't help them with the planning even though he knew the weakness of Yun Shen. Jiang Yuyan noticed it, "Uncle, is there something that is bothering you?"

Giving out a deep sigh, Lu Chen replied, "There is something I know about Yun Shen but I am afraid we can't use it against him as my elder brother promised someone to bury it."

"Sir, are you referring to the woman's death case a year back?" San Zemin asked, and Lu Chen nodded.

"What was it?" Jiang Yuyan asked curiously.

"Last year a woman died in Yun Shen's farmhouse. Yun Shen is a womanizer, you know that. He laid his eyes on one woman who was just twenty-eight-year-old and worked in our company. Yun Shen tried to get her attention by all means, but she was not interested in him. Not Getting any positive response for long, he kept her captive in his farmhouse to force her to accept him willingly."

"Did he...."

"No, he did nothing with her as he at least maintained his sanity to not harm her but his intention was to make her accept him willingly as she hurt his ego by rejecting him again and again," Lu Chen replied.

"That old piece of old rag," San Zemin mumbled and Jiang Yuyan could see San Zemin looked affected whenever they mentioned Yun Shen's name.

"Lu Chen continued, "Her parents were worried and as she was missing. Police couldn't find her so they came to the elder brother to ask for help as she was working here. Elder brother willingly agreed but before we could find her, she was dead."

"How?" Jiang Yuyan asked while it looked like others already knew about it.

"One day the woman got out of his farmhouse but before she could escape, the security got to know about it. In a hurry of escaping as she was being followed, a car, unfortunately, hit her on the road nearby farmhouse and she died on the spot."

“Why can’t we use it against him?” Jiang Yuyan asked, and this time Xiao Dong spoke as he was with Lu Jinhai when he was looking into this matter.

“Mr. Chairman wanted to punish Yun Shen when he found out but the woman’s parents pleaded with him to not do so. They didn’t want after the death of their daughter her name to remember with something sad and didn’t wish others to know what their daughter had gone through. Though nothing bad had happened with her, they thought people would think otherwise. So Mr. Chairman agreed to it and kept his word. Mr. Chairman couldn’t punish him legally but he warned him not to be seen with any woman ever or he will forget his promise with the woman’s parents. Now Mr. Chairman is not here, he is back to being what he was a year ago.”

“Boss knew about it too, but he respected Mr. Chairman’s words and kept quiet,” Xiao Min added.

“We can’t go against Mr. Chairman’s will, but it’s okay as I have a better plan for him,” Jiang Yuyan commented.

“Tonight, after dinner, we can visit him. Everything is set as per the boss asked,” San Zemin informed.

Nodding, Jiang Yuyan instructed, “Ask Ye Bai to get his medical tools ready as he might have to sew something.”

San Zemin nodded.

---

Jiang Yuyan left the office and went to pick up Lu Lijun. When Lu Lijun saw Jiang Yuyan his expressions didn’t change and Jiang Yuyan was certain that he was either upset with her or something was going on in his head. Before she could open the door of a car for him, he opened it, just to instruct her, “Sit inside.”

Jiang Yuyan felt relieved hearing him and sat inside. This little guy, why she was so concerned with him? she thought. He was the only person she could tolerate anything he did without complaining.

When Lu Lijun sat beside Jiang Yuyan on the back passenger seat, he instructed, “No need to step out of the car. Just wait

for me while sitting inside.”

It surprised Jiang Yuyan as she countered, “It’s fine. My legs won’t hurt if I stand outside for some time.”

“Don’t make me repeat,” Lu Lijun warned as he stared at her, his expressions cold and he looked so serious about what he had said.

## 692 She Is My Wife...

There was no way this little guy could order Jiang Yuyan around and control what she should do and what not. When she thought to say this to him directly, the way he stared at her, he looked so serious and there was something in his sight that shut Jiang Yuyan and she agreed.

“Okay, I will wait inside the car.”

Now Jiang Yuyan understood that whenever Lu Lijun argued with others, why they kept quiet always. He was a kid, but the way he spoke and his sight was really something that would make others not talk more. She was the one whom most of the people were scared of nowadays, but she had let her guards down in front of a kid.

He was a colder than his elder brother and if he was like this when he was still young, what would happen when he would grow up, thought Jiang Yuyan.

On the way to the Lu Mansion, Lu Lijun stayed quiet while staring outside of the window but Jiang Yuyan thought to talk as she didn't want him to be so quiet and she wished him to be like before even if that meant he would tease her that annoyed her.

“How was your day in school?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

Not saying a word, Lu Lijun pulled out the sheets from his bags and handed it over to Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan understood what it must be and looked into it. She was not surprised seeing him getting full marks in his tests. Lu Qiang had already told her he was a gifted child, so it was given. For him, studying and getting good grades was not a big deal, but this realization made Jiang Yuyan think about something else.

Lu Lijun was smarter than the kids of his age and understood the things. It was her mistake to treat him like a kid and pamper him. He was the one who always acted as an adult in

front of her so she thought the reason behind his silence was she treated him as a kid thinking he doesn't understand the things and being ready to do everything for him. She never gave him a chance to decide anything on his own for himself.

When they reached home, Jiang Yuyan didn't instruct him about anything and let him do the things on his own. She didn't ask him to get fresh and get ready or anything what she always did.

At the dinner table Jiang Yuyan was eating slowly as she was not feeling like eating anything. She felt Lu Lijun's gaze on her and immediately started eating faster.

"Take it slow and finish it all," Lu Lijun ordered.

Jiang Yuyan said nothing as she knew if she refused, he would make it difficult for her to step outside of the home and make her rest when it was the time she needed to be out.

"Nice to see you are getting pampered again, Yuyan." Su Hui commented, carrying a teasing smile that no one liked.

"Is it wrong to get pampered, Aunt Su Hui?" Lu Lijun asked.

"When did I say it? Instead, I think she is fortunate to get care from you, Lu Lijun," Su Hui replied not giving much thought about it but she didn't expect to hear something surprising in return.

"She is my wife, so it's given," Lu Lijun replied, which made everyone's heart skip a beat and they all stopped eating.

No one knew what to say while Lu Lijun continued eating without minding others.

Jiang Yuyan stared at him for a long time and then looked at her mother-in-law and elders who were equally shocked.

Su hui was shocked too, but she preferred to enjoy Jiang Yuyan's situation more. Su Hui understood this little guy would make it difficult for Jiang Yuyan.

Elder Lu signaled them to eat and not talk about it at this moment.

After dinner, everyone went to the garden. Jiang Yuyan asked Lu Lian and Lu Bao to take Lu Lijun with them, and she stayed with the elders and her mother-in-law.

No one knows how to start the conversation as it was something they didn't know how to deal with.

"What do you think about it, father?" Ning Jiahui asked.

"It's not his fault. He is doing what he had gone through, what he had seen and heard and what is the truth for him," elder Lu replied.

"What do you mean, honey?" Grandma asked.

"It's clear that he thinks of Yuyan as his wife as he knew they got married. We can't force him to not talk like this or think like this even he doesn't understand what he said."

"I told him it was the game that was over once we came back from the temple and he even agreed to it," Jiang Yuyan informed.

"I knew it would happen. Though he must not understand the meaning of being a husband and wife, he will always keep it in his mind that Yuyan is his wife," Ning Jiahui added as worry painted her face.

Feeling guilty, Jiang Yuyan apologised, "I am sorry, mother. I didn't know it would turn out like this."

"You need not apologize as you are already doing so much for this family," said elder Lu and other two ladies nodded.

"We have to think how we can make him forget about it," Ning Jiahui suggested.

"I will try to talk to him. I am sure he will understand and won't say it again," Jiang Yuyan offered.

Others agreed as Ning Jiahui spoke. "As he only listens to only you, then it would be better if you talk to him."

Lu Lijun was in the gazebo when Jiang Yuyan went to talk to him. Lu Lian and Lu Bao left them alone as they knew Jiang Yuyan was there to talk to him.

Lu Lijun was sitting silently on the semicircular bench inside the gazebo and Jiang Yuyan sat on another semicircular bench opposite to him as she faced him.



## 693 Weird Habits...

Jiang Yuyan stayed silent for a while, not knowing how to start the conversation. If Lu Lijun was an adult, she would have talked clearly but dealing with a kid and that to someone like Lu Lijun made it difficult for her. He was not someone she would deal with by making up stories.

Breathing deeply, Jiang Yuyan finally spoke, “Seems like you enjoy sitting here a lot.”

“Hmm!” Nodding Lu Lijun looked at her as he said, “You can say what you are here for.”

This startled Jiang Yuyan. ‘There is no way I can hide things from this little guy,’ she thought and Lu Lijun continued looking at her.

‘How can this kid always catch me off guard? Am I that obvious,’ she thought again as she continued looking back in his eyes as if she was trying to understand what was going on in his mind.

“Those big eyes of yours talk too loudly,” Lu Lijun commented as he averted his sight from her and looked at where he was staring at before, the water in the pond that reflected the starry sky in it.

Jiang Yuyan followed his sight and looked at it too as she spoke about what she was there for, “The thing you said to aunt Su Hui at the dining table that....”

“Do you not like it if I care for you?” Lu Lijun asked, interrupting her, his sight still fixed at the pond.

“No, not that. It’s fine if you care for me. I was talking about what you said later....”

Lu Lijun gave out a deep sigh and looked at her, “I hope, after what I said, aunt Su Hui won’t trouble you.”

“So, did you say it just to stop aunt Su Hui?” Jiang Yuyan asked and not answering her, Lu Lijun stood up, “I need to

study. Let's go back.”

Jiang Yuyan continued looking at him to know what he meant but as he didn't answer clearly, she thought to take it as he was trying to shut aunt Su Hui. Asking him again would be like reminding him about the marriage they had gone through and it won't be good when she wanted Lu Lijun to forget it.

“Do you wish to sit here?” Li Lijun asked that made her snapped out of her thoughts and Jiang Yuyan shook her head.

“Then let's go.” Saying, Lu Lijun offered her his hand to get up.

Jiang Yuyan looked at his hand, her mind was still in a confused state but when she saw Lu Lijun with neutral expressions as if everything was fine and there was nothing to think about, Jiang Yuyan accepted his hand and stood up.

Even though Lu Lijun understood what Jiang Yuyan wanted to say, there was no change in him as if he did nothing wrong or anything inappropriate. Lu Lijun always talked sarcastically with Su Hui so Jiang Yuyan thought this time too he did it as his habit and there was no meaning to it. For her he was still a kid who didn't understand the things, so she thought to ignore it.

When they return to the room, Jiang Yuyan waited for Lu Lijun to finish his study work so she could put him to sleep and leave the Lu Mansion to take care of the things she planned.

Lu Lijun finished it faster and seeing him Jiang Yuyan instructed, “It's late now. You should sleep.”

“Are you going out again tonight?” Lu Lijun asked.

There was no way Jiang Yuyan could lie, “Hmm, I have something important to do.”

“I will go to bed on my own. You can go,” Lu Lijun instructed.

“Will you be fine on your own or should I...”

“You just take care of yourself. If you failed to do so, I won't let you step out next time,” Lu Lijun warned as he went to the bed.

Jiang Yuyan gave him a narrowed eyes look as she thought, 'This kid'.

Ignoring her, Lu Lijun closed his eyes as he instructed, "Turn off the lights."

Turning off the lights, Jiang Yuyan left. The car was ready for her as usual and the butler Xu Dui was present too who greeted her and opened the car's door for her.

On the way, Jiang Yuyan realized, Lu Lijun started talking more, but most of his words were sarcastic. He didn't talk funny or didn't even smile.

'It was better when he was talking less,' thought Jiang Yuyan but suddenly shook her head, 'What am I thinking? I tried my best to make him talk and how can I think like this?'

Jiang Yuyan went to the secret mansion where San Zemin, Xiao Min, and the butler were ready to go with her.

Just as they were about to step out, Jiang Yuyan asked, "Ye Bai, is our kitchen actually in working condition, or is it just for the namesake?"

"It's in a working condition as I personally cook there," Ye Bai, the butler answered.

"I just wondered why no one showed me the kitchen when I had visited all the places in the mansion," Jiang Yuyan commented.

"My apology boss. As that's my area, so I would have introduced it to you," said the butler.

"It's not yet late to do so," Jiang Yuyan countered.

Understanding the meaning, the butler led her way to the kitchen.

San Zemin and others looked surprised at how their boss could ask for the tour of the kitchen when they were going on an important mission but no one said anything and waited for their boss to return after visiting the kitchen.

They found their boss weird sometimes as she had a habit of doing something out of the blue and they could never guess

why she did that.

After almost ten minutes, Jiang Yuyan and the butler returned from the kitchen and they all went out of the mansion to sit in the cars and left. Other than Jiang Yuyan, Xiao Min, the butler, San Zemin, and Jiang Yuyan's driver, they took two more men with them who were the best ones among all by strength-wise.

# 694 Shocking Words From The Noble Lady...

Along with her men, Jiang Yuyan reached one bungalow at one of the expensive properties in the city. The three cars stopped in front of the tall compound wall surrounding the premise of the two-story bungalow. The entrance had a huge and well decorated wooden gate that had the support of an iron base.

San Zemin stepped towards the gate and the two guards present there bowed to him. Jiang Yuyan saw it while still sitting in the car, and she understood her men were well prepared.

San Zemin signaled others to get down as everything was clear. The driver stepped out and opened the car door for Jiang Yuyan.

Surprisingly, the guard at the gate opened the gate to let them enter inside instead of stopping them as he informed San Zemin, "They are on the first floor."

Nodding, San Zemin led the way to go inside the Bungalow which sat in the vast pieces of land which allowed it to have an immense garden, the swimming pool, and all the outdoor facilities.

The two-story bungalow shined with bright lights everywhere. The multiple huge glass windows that made it look like a glasshouse, were covered with curtains from that restricted one to see from what was happening inside.

They entered the living room of the bungalow as the door was not locked. Inside, one servant was present, doing his work who was not surprised to see them and instead greeted San Zemin.

San Zemin instructed his two men to stay in the living room while San Zemin, Xiao Min, Jiang Yuyan, the butler and one

more man who was carrying butler's toolbox, all went to the first floor.

On the first floor, they stopped in front of the door where they could hear the voices of a man and a woman talking and laughing.

“Boss, you can wait here as....”

“Open the door,” Jiang Yuyan instructed, ignoring what San Zemin was trying to say.

‘Boss, never listen to anyone,’ thinking San Zemin kicked the door which opened with little effort as it was not closed completely.

As the door opened, San Zemin entered, and Xiao min and the butler followed him.

Yun Shen was in a bed with a woman, and they were not in an appropriate condition. The moment he saw someone kicking the door and enter inside, Yun Shen exclaimed, “How dare you to disturb...”

Yun Shen stopped as he saw San Zemin and the other two men.

San Zemin signaled the woman in the bed to get out from there and the woman immediately did so and left the room after bowing lightly to San Zemin. It showed the woman too was there on the order of San Zemin.

Yun Shen, who was in the bed almost naked, understood why these people were there and collected himself.

“Put on your clothes as no one is willing to see the unpleasant sight,” San Zemin instructed.

Having a smirk on his lips, Yun Shen got up from the bed as he put on the bathrobe that was lying at the one side of the bed and spoke.

“It's not good to disturb the man when he's in the middle of something like this. It seems you forgot it after your wife left you, San Zemin. Trust me, leave this and get the woman for you.”

Saying Yun Shen sat on the couch after wearing his bathrobe while San Zemin replied, “It’s better than not having a wife even once in life and going after other women like a hungry wolf.”

“I forgot you are good with words. Anyway, tell me what was the purpose of barging into my place like this?”

Just then Jiang Yuyan entered the room as the butler followed her. Yun Shen looked at her in surprise. First, she was at his place at this hour and second; she was looking like a young girl wearing a t-shirt and jeans, totally opposite to how she looked in the office like a queen.

Still, his eyes glued to her as no one could deny she was still so pretty. Jiang Yuyan sat on the couch, exactly opposite to Yun Shen as she stared at this old man in front of her, sitting wearing a bathrobe.

“Seems like Mrs. Lu took my words seriously and is really interested in coming to my bed,” Yun Shen commented as he gazed at Jiang Yuyan with his lustful sight.

San, Zemin who was standing behind Jiang Yuyan was about to step forward to get Yun Shen as his disrespectful words towards his boss angered him. Jiang Yuyan was his ex-boss’s wife whom his ex-boss loved dearly and now she herself was their boss so he respected her a lot. San Zemin had seen her crying, smiling, and in most of the situations whenever he had to follow his boss that was unknown to Jiang Yuyan. He knew what kind of person she was and why his previous boss loved her so much.

It angered Xiao Min too, but he was one rational person and knew what his boss was here for and controlled himself. He knew, after this too, his boss had to hear such things, and being a woman would make it even worse for her.

Jiang Yuyan raised her hand to stop San Zemin.

Having an evil smirk, Jiang Yuyan looked straight in Yun Shen’s eyes as she said, “I am one horny bitch, whom the pig like you can’t satisfy.”

No one expected such a reply from her. San Zemin, Xiao Min, and the other man got a shock of their life while the butler smiled at it. Talking like this was nothing new for them, but hearing it from their lady boss, who was one noble lady, shocked them.

Yun Shen himself was shocked, but he laughed it out.

“Mrs. Lu is no less than her husband when it comes to beat someone with words,” Yun Shen commented and asked, “So how come Mrs. Lu thought to visit me suddenly?”

Jiang Yuyan raised her hand and Xiao Min, who was standing behind her, handed her over the file.

Thud!!

“Sign it,” said Jiang Yuyan, looking at the file she just threw on the center table.”



# 695 Bold Words From The Lady Boss...

“What’s this?” Yun Shen asked as he was still taking everything lightly.

“I don’t think Mr. Yun Shen is brainless to understand why I am here and what these papers are for,” Jiang Yuyan commented but Yun Shen looked unaffected as the evil grin painted on his lips.

“I will sign these papers but...”

Jiang Yuyan waited for Yun Shen to complete his line as his sight observed her from head to toe.

“But, I will sign if Mrs. Lu agrees to be in my bed.”

Punch!!

“Ahhh..”

There was a sudden movement in the room, and everyone heard someone whining in pain.

This time, San Zemin couldn’t control himself and went to Yun Shen even before Jiang Yuyan could say anything to stop him. San Zemin was so fast that before Yun Shen could react, San Zemin punched him hard in the face that made the corner of his lips to bleed.

Holding Yun Shen by his bathrobe at the chest, San Zemin pinned him in the couch, “If it was not for your signature, I would have shot you.”

Jiang Yuyan said nothing as she understood San Zemin. Also, she didn’t want to take away his right to care for his boss and beat the asshole, while the other men standing in the room supported San Zemin’s move too, by being silent.

Yun Shen laughed at what San Zemin said, “Go ahead and shoot me then.”

“Once the boss is done with you, I will make sure to give you a painful death. For now, keep your tongue in control so that I won’t cut it.” Warning, San Zemin let Yun Shen go and went back to his place.

“Mrs Lu, I can see you have no control over your men. What kind of boss are you?” Yun Shen questioned as he sat back on the couch while wiping the blood from the corner of his lips and tidied up his bathrobe.

“They are in control, that’s why you are alive to talk shamelessly, Mr. Yun Shen,” said Jiang Yuyan calmly.

“Hmm! So, where were we?” Yun Shen asked and laughed teasingly, “Oh forgive me, I should not say it or San Zemin might go crazy again.”

“Try it,” San Zemin warned.

Yun Shen left out a chuckle, “I am not scared of dying, San Zemin. You know it well that I am not afraid of anything so there is nothing you can blackmail me with to sign these papers. Instead, I am being generous to give you a way to make me sign these papers and that is to please me, which only a woman can do.”

Saying Yun Shen looked at Jiang Yuyan with his lustful sight that didn’t affect Jiang Yuyan.

Xiao Min felt Yun Shen was crossing the line with his lady boss, who was sitting calmly even after hearing offending things from the old man. The thought scared Xiao Min that what if his boss would get a gun and kill Yun Shen for real because she was totally unpredictable?

“How about getting the two strong men standing downstairs to fulfil the desire one old lusty man? I am sure they can fuck you hard to make you want more like a whore.”

Another shocking reply came from Jiang Yuyan shocked them. She called Yun Shen a whore, and that was something to make a man angry but the shameless man in front was calm and said, “Mrs. Lu, I am interested in women and especially like you. Innocent delicate from outside but feisty inside.”

It's not about what Mr. Yun Shen is interested in. It's about how I would like to see a whore like you getting fucked by two men," said Jiang Yuyan.

The men standing behind were getting shocked again and again with her words that they pitied Yun Shen and felt like to close their ears.

'Where did she learn to talk like this?' they all thought.

Even after dealing with the worst people, they never talked to this extent, but their lady boss knew no limits.

'Is she enjoying talking like this?' they wondered but standing behind her made it impossible for them to observe her expressions.

"Mrs Lu..."

"Mr Yun Shen, it would be better if you sign the papers as my boss..." Xiao Min interrupted Yun Shen from talking anything out of limit as he wanted to stop his boss getting into shameless talk fight with the brazen old man.

"Your boss? I am interested in your boss now," interrupting, Xiao Min, Yun Shen stood up as he looked at Jiang Yuyan, "Why don't Mrs. Lu Join me for the drink? We have a nice bar here in my room and I am sure you will enjoy it."

Instead of looking angry, Yun Shen was calm.

"Boss doesn't like to drink," San Zemin declared.

"Oh, is it? Then what does Mrs. Lu Likes?" Yun Shen asked as he pressed the button on the hand rest of the couch and ordered, "Bring something nice for a lady as she doesn't like to drink."

"Fruits will do," said the butler out of the blue and Yun Shen looked at him.

"Our boss likes to eat fruits a lot and especially after cutting them with her own hands," the butler added.

San Zemin and Xiao Min gave the narrowed eyes look to the butler as if asking, 'Are you out of your mind?' but in return the butler offered them a pleasant smile.

In just a few minutes the servant entered the room with so many fruits in the small baskets arranged in the big tray and kept them on the coffee table in the room. Later he arranged the wine bottle, and the glassed on the same table.

“Mrs Lu, just for you. We can talk about the papers nicely being friendly with each other, don’t you think so?” Yun Shen asked as he stood up.

Jiang Yuyan nodded slightly as she observed the man that gave him a wrong signal that she was interested in him too.

Yun Shen wanted to try his best to get this woman to his bed after getting to hear an insulting words from her. how can he let her go without even doing anything when she herself came to him and provoked him.

--

Even though maintaining a stable update of two chapters a day and scarificing my off day to write, it’s really sad for me to see votes are really less and ranking going down.

# 696 Way Of Being Friendly...

Seeing Jiang Yuyan observing him as he stood up, Yun Shen spoke, “Seems like Mrs. Lu liked my way of being friendly. Please join me.”

Jiang Yuyan stood up and Yun Shen led her way towards the coffee table, not noticing this woman had no good intentions in following him and he was asking for trouble. Yun Shen grabbed the wine bottle excitedly while still standing as he was eager to get Jiang Yuyan. The thing that made him so confident was the power he held in his hands that the woman in front of needed it desperately.

The moment Jiang Yuyan went to the coffee table, she looked at the fruits and Yun Shen spoke while pouring the wine, “I am waiting to eat the fruits cut by Mrs. Lu.”

Staring at the knife, Jiang Yuyan picked it up as she checked it while running her forefinger along the sharp edge of the knife.

Seeing the pretty woman in an amusement, Yun Shen spoke, “I think being friendly will benefit both of us...”

Ahhh!!!

Smash!!!

There was a loud scream of a man and a sound of sudden glass break that startled everyone in the room but the butler who was expecting to hear a nice melody, the moment his boss went to the coffee table.

Everyone’s eyes left wide open seeing Jiang Yuyan holding a knife in one right hand that had stabbed into Yun Shen’s stomach and Yun Shen was in a shock as well as in immense pain. The wine glass he was holding a moment before had shattered into the pieces on the floor.

In a pain while his hands holding Jiang Yuyan’s hand, Yun Shen tried to speak, “W-What did you....”

“This is my way of being friendly,” said Jiang Yuyan as she let go of the knife that was still stuck in Yun Shen’s stomach and pushed him back with her left hand.

Xiao Min, who already felt worried that his boss will do something dangerous, stepped forward, but the butler stopped him, “Stay out of it.”

San Zemin and Xiao Min understood the butler and Jiang Yuyan must have planned something that these two didn’t know.

Yun She, who was whining in pain, held the chair to get its support and sat on it as he shouted, “Take this out and get me to the doctor.”

The knife that meant to cut the fruits, was stabbed in the lower side of his stomach in the bowl area. The blood made his white bathrobe stained with red color, which flowed out of the wound.

“I have no such intentions Mr. Yun Shen,” Saying Jiang Yuyan sat in the chair opposite to him. She looked calm but evil, who had no regret about what she just did.

“You bitch! If I die, you won’t get what you are here for.”

“Losing is worth if I can see the jerk like you die in pain,” Jiang Yuyan countered as she didn’t care even if he died.

“Get me the doctor,” Yun She shouted again.

Jiang Yuyan smirked, seeing Yun Shen in pain. He was so scared to touch the knife stabbed in his stomach that he couldn’t dare to pull it out and neither could he dare to cover the wound to stop the blood flow. Moreover, he knew pulling it out would be bad as it would increase the blood flow out.

“Sign the papers first,” Jiang Yuyan instructed and Xiao Min picked up the file from the center table and held it in front of Yun Shen.

“I won’t,” Yun Shen growled.

“Well, that’s even better. It’s not like I Can stab someone every day so it was fun doing so. As you don’t want to sign and you

are of no use for me, then let me have some more fun.” Saying Jiang Yuyan’s evil sight examined Yun Shen that scared him.

“W-What fun?” he asked.

Jiang Yuyan smiled like a devil, “I wonder, which could be the best place to stab so that it will give you more pain but you won’t die.”

“You...”

Ignoring Yun Shen, Jiang Yuyan looked at the butler, “Ye Bai, how about stabbing him in the chest and puncturing his heart or lungs? Will this pig’s ribs be an obstacle?”

“You can stab him at where his ribs are attached to the sternum as it has soft tissues that will allow the knife to enter easily but make sure to not stab too deep if you want him to suffer in pain,” the butler replied.

Jiang Yuyan asked again, “How about liver or kidney? I have always dreamt about to stab someone in that red color carrot like liver or that bean shaped beautiful kidneys.”

“I am sure boss will enjoy stabbing in the liver and kidneys even more, but it can give him fast death as these organs get a heavy supply of the blood so you can keep it for the last.”

“For last? Hmm, I was thinking of stabbing in his rotten brain, Can I?” Jiang Yuyan asked, nonchalantly.

“It would be difficult as it’s a skull but the boss can stab him in the eye with a knife pointing upward and we can see if the knife can reach his brain. I never witnessed it, but I am eager to check it too,” said the butler.

‘what these two were talking about,’ the other men felt puzzled and shocked as their sights traveled from the butler to Jiang Yuyan as they talked seriously.

Yun Shen, who was sitting whining in a pain, was thinking if these two were joking or it was for real. The way Jiang Yuyan stabbed him, it was sure not a joke; he thought.

“Won’t we need more knife to stab at the different parts as I don’t wish to pull out the knife after stabbing once?” Jiang

Yuyan asked the butler. It looked like only these two exist there and others were invisible.

Xiao Min and San Zemin looked at each other but preferred to kept silent.

—

Mass release on sunday if the rank goes back to top five...



## 697 Scary But Amazing...

“Rest assured boss, we have a nice collection of knives as using knives is my hobby.”

Saying, the butler pulled out one black color cloth roll. Holding it up, he let it unrolled, which opened to be in a rectangular shape and showed distinct types of kitchen knives stuck in the transparent pockets of that black cloth.

“Boss can choose whichever she likes,” the butler instructed.

These two looked like they were ready to butcher an animal and others continued looking at them in a shock, not knowing how to react.

It scared the hell out of Yun Shen seeing how serious these two were, not to forget those scary knives in the black clothes. Yun Shen knew how cruel San Zemin’s side could be when Lu Qiang was the boss, but he never thought their new boss, the fragile woman, was even scarier.

‘Is she the daughter of a gangster? But Jiang Peizhi is a decent man,’ thought Yun Shen as he pleaded, “W- What are you two talking about? L- Let me go, I’ll sign the paper.....”

“Shhh!! Don’t spoil the fun.”

Shutting him down, Jiang Yuyan looked at the knives and said to the butler, “I liked the third one. It looks good and I think it will penetrate nicely and slowly.”

“I agree with the boss but if the boss wants to give him more pain, the fourth one is even better,” suggested the butler.

“Really? Let me try it then,” said Jiang Yuyan, and the butler pulled out the fourth number knife from the pocket of black cloth.

Even after Yun Shen was ready to sign the paper, these people didn’t care, and it assured Yun Shen that these people really wanted to kill him and didn’t care about whether they lost the president’s position.

The moment the butler stepped forward to hand over that knife to Jiang Yuyan, Yun Shen shouted, “Stoop! P-Please, give me the papers. I will sign.... Please... I will do whatever you say.”

Yun Shen, kneeled in front of Jiang Yuyan even though the knife stabbed in his stomach hurt a lot, but imagining the pain he might feel once these butchers stab him again and again, he thought to bear it.

Yun Shen held Jiang Yuyan’s feet, “I beg you, please. Let me go and I promise I will do whatever you ask me to.”

“Get your dirty hands off my feet or you will see your stomach hanging out of your body,” Jiang Yuyan warned.

“M-My apology. I take everything back that I said to you. Please forgive me,” Yun Shen pleaded.

“I am not in a mood,” said Jiang Yuyan and Yun Shen continued pleading. “Please, don’t...”

“Don’t you want to know how it feels to die slowly while suffering the pain as in hell?” Jiang Yuyan asked, interrupting him.

“No Please. I will give you whatever you want and I will go away from here to never come back. Please let me go.” Yun Shen was crying and sweating as he was in pain and scared to death.

“Haven’t you said it a while ago that you are not afraid of dying? Am I right, San Zemin?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she looked at San Zemin.

“Yes, boss,” replied San Zemin who was shocked by his boss’s actions.

Jiang Yuyan took the knife from the butler and ran the finger along its sharp age to check its sharpness, the same way she did it with the knife which was there to cut the fruit and it scared Yun Shen even more.

“Don’t kill me, please.” Yun Shen looked at Xiao Min and said, “Please tell your boss to forgive me. You have known me for long.”

Xiao Min thought this was the perfect opportunity to stop everything and finish the work of why they were there. He knew his boss was playing with Yun Shen, so he acted as if he really pitied Yun Shen.

“Boss, for my sake, can’t you forgive him just this once?”

Jiang Yuyan gave Xiao Min a narrowed eyes look and Xiao Min stepped forward, “Please boss, Just this once. I know him for long and it will hurt to see him die like this.”

Not saying anything, Jiang Yuyan got up from the chair as she passed the knife in her hand back to the butler and instructed, “Treat his wound but make sure to stitch it without giving him anesthesia.”

“W-What?” Yun Shen exclaimed, but Xiao Min shut him up.

“Mr. Yun Shen, be glad that you would be alive.”

Yun Shen nodded, and the butler came to him with his toolbox. The butler did what his boss instructed him to do. The moment the butler pulled out the knife, Yun Shen screamed. “Ahhh!!”

“What the....” Cursing, Jiang Yuyan stepped towards the door as she instructed, “Get his signature. I am downstairs.”

During the whole treatment, the room was filled with the whining of Yun Shen. San Zemin looked at the knife and signaled Xiao Min to look at it. Jiang Yuyan didn’t stab Yun Shen too deeply, but she scared him with her behavior.

Both couldn’t help but praise their lady boss as they thought, ‘Scary but amazing lady. No wonder the boss loved her.’

Once the treatment was done, the butler instructed, “You would be fine in ten days, Mr. Yun Shen. These are the medicines you need and all the instructions are written here.”

“A-Are you sure I need not go for surgery and I would be fine?” Yun Shen asked, feeling worried.

“I have done the surgery here already and injected you with medicines, but if Mr. Yun Shen wishes to visit the hospital, I will inform the boss so that you will get the reason to visit it,” the butler said as he took out his hand gloves which were soaked in blood.

“N-No, I believe you. Don’t call her.”

Getting the signature from Yun Shen, they all went downstairs where Jiang Yuyan was roaming outside in the garden, looking at the beauty of the place. She looked so innocent from the distance that no one could say that this woman almost killed one person a while ago.

San Zemin instructed the servants in the bungalow to take care of Yun Shen and left the place along with Jiang Yuyan.

# 698 Just One Excited Young Girl...

When Jiang Yang and her men were dealing with Yun Shen, at one pub in the city, the few people were discussing the Lu Corporation and the position of Chairman and the President.

“Mr, Fu Jing, I heard you could not get the position of the Chairman of Lu corporation.”

Fu Jing, who was sitting opposite to the man on the couch of one pub, gave out a deep sigh, “Mr. Xi Cheng, things didn’t go according to what we planned as suddenly Mrs. Lu showed up.”

Xi Cheng raised his eyebrow in the question, “Mrs. Lu?”

“Yes.”

“Don’t worry, it won’t be difficult to deal with the old lady,” said Xi Cheng.

“Seems like Mr. Xi Cheng didn’t get the complete information,” commented Li Yong, who was sitting beside Fu Jing.

“What information?” Xi Cheng asked.

“The lady was not Mrs. Lu Jinhai but Mrs. Lu Qiang,” Fu Jing informed.

“What? That young girl?” Xi Cheng asked.

“Yes, and she already has Ex-president Lu Qiang’s power in her hand,” Li Yong added.

“So, the new boss is Ms. Jiang Yuyan?” Xi Cheng asked again to make sure and the two men in front nodded.

Xi Cheng smiled as he thought, ‘No wonder she can be Nicky’s friend out of all other girls in this world.’

Snapping out of his thoughts, Xi Chang warned, “Don’t underestimate her. A few days back I got the taste of her

leadership. She didn't seem like a simple person.”

“She is just one excited young girl going overboard after getting the power in hand. Don't worry, we will handle her and the president's position would be ours for sure,” Fu Jing declared.

“I am expecting the meeting with her soon,” Xi Cheng, informed.

“Can I ask regarding what?” Fu Jing asked.

“Just to add something more to help you,” Xi Cheng replied, not intending to explain anything.

“By the way, Mr. Xi Cheng, who shot you suddenly?” Li Yong asked.

“Someone who wished to do it since long and finally ended up doing it after losing his mind,” Xi Cheng replied as he smirked and added, “Being a businessman comes with having enemies so don't worry about it.”

Fu Jing and Li Yong asked nothing further and just agreed to what Xi Cheng said.

Once Fu Jing and Li Yong left, Xi Chang looked at his assistant, “Is there a way to know what exactly happened that day inside the factory?”

“Boss, all the men were killed and from what we got to know from the servants in the farmhouse is that there was one young woman who was scarier than the men with her.”

“Hmm,” Xi Cheng said nothing as he looked in deep thought.

“Should we ask them for the meeting?” the assistant asked.

“Wait for their reply. Till then we can process other plans to get inside Lu Corporation,” Xi Cheng suggested.

—

On the way back from Yun Shen's bungalow, Jiang Yuyan was sitting calmly in the car with her eyes closed. Xiao Min, who was sitting in the front passenger seat, looked at her through the rear-view mirror. It was late at night, so he thought his boss must be sleepy and instructed the driver to drive carefully

to make the ride smooth so that it won't disturb Jiang Yuyan's sleep.

As Xiao Min looked at Jiang Yuyan's calm face, he thought about how happy she and his boss used to be together and how days turned like this that this innocent looking cheerful woman turned like this. All the memories from their first encounter on the airport till his boss and she were together, flashed in front of Xiao Min's eyes.

The last time when he saw her while accepting Lu Qiang's last gift for her, he couldn't dare to talk to her after that. It broke his heart to see her like this and wished her to be happy again, which looked nearly impossible after what she got herself into with the power she got from Lu Qiang. He could only do one thing for her and that was to support and work for her the same way he did for his previous boss.

Knowing Jiang Yuyan's deep love for his boss, Xiao Min thought if he could ever see her smiling brightly again the same way she used to smile seeing his boss.

When they reached the Lu Mansion, Jiang Yuyan was still sleeping in the car. Xiao Min and the driver looked at her through the rear-view mirror but no one had the courage to disturb her sleep as she looked tired that she actually was after studying, planning and plotting for days.

Both looked at each other thinking what to do and Xiao Min signalled him to stay quiet and both continued sitting inside the car feeling worried that their movements might disturb her sleep.

The butler, Xu Dui came to the car, seeing it was parked, but no one stepped out. Xiao Min lowered down the windscreen and signalled butler to be quiet. The butler looked at the back passenger seat and saw Jiang Yuyan sleeping. The butler stepped back to stand at the side to wait for her to wake up and then he could do his job for his boss once she was awake.

Everyone could only think that if their boss, Lu Qiang was here, he would have her carried inside.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan all the time, always reminded them about their boss and they couldn't help but feel sad and emotional.

After almost half an hour Jiang Yuyan woke up and looked around. She realised she reached the home, but she was still in the car and no one woke up her up.

"When did we reach?" Jiang Yuyan asked, her voice hoarse and she sounded tired.

Xiao Min who was busy with his cell phone, turned to look at her, "Just a while ago." Replying, Xiao Min stepped out of the car as the driver did the same and went to open the car's door for his boss.

=====

Back in top 5 - Mass release on sunday



## 699 Missing Him Too..

Stepping out of the car, Jiang looked at the butler, who came to her and bowed. Same thing happened, just like the night when Jiang Yuyan returned home after finding Lu Feng. One servant came to her with the huge bowl of water and she knew what to do.

She thought if it was some kind of ritual to wash hands like this whenever she returned home after getting blood on her hand. The next moment another thought struck to her mind that how come the butler got to know both the times she had done something like harming or killing someone.

Xiao Min and the driver bowed to their boss and left after leaving her in the butler's care.

The butler led her way towards the secret room behind the mansion. As they reached there, the butler suggested, "Young mistress seems tired so it would be better if you sleep here."

Jiang Yuyan wanted to ask him so many things, but she was tired to do so, and nodded to what the butler said.

"The things young mistress needs are ready in the bathroom. Get fresh and rest well. If there is something, press this button," the butler added, showing her the button near the bedside.

Jiang Yuyan nodded again, and the butler left.

After getting freshen up, Jiang Yuyan dropped the idea of sleeping there. Though she was tired, she went to the second floor and entered Lu Qiang and her bedroom. Getting on the bed, she slept at the one side of the bed facing the side that Lu Qiang used to sleep on.

Jiang Yuyan caressed his place with her hands, feeling his presence there. As her eyes got heavy again with the sleep, with her blurry vision, she saw Lu Qiang sleeping in his place facing her. Looking at her smiling pleasantly, Lu Qiang patted her head as he spoke, "Sleep."

Smiling, Jiang Yuyan closed her eyes and fell asleep the next moment as she murmured, “Lu Qiang.”

—

The next morning Jiang Yuyan woke up and noticed the sunlight brightening the room. She realised she had one more plan to execute that day as the next day was the day of selecting the new president. When Jiang Yuyan moved to wake up, she noticed someone was sitting on the couch.

“Lu Lijun?” she exclaimed.

“Good morning,” Lu Lijun greeted her as he kept the tablet in his hand aside.

Jiang Yuyan rubbed her eyes to check if it was her dream, but it turned out to be reality as Lu Lijun stepped towards her.

“How come you are here?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she sat on the bed.

“I missed elder brother.”

On this reply from Lu Lijun, both stayed quiet for a while. Mentioning Lu Qiang was an emotional thing for both.

Lu Lijun raised his hand to touch Jiang Yuyan’s forehead, but she moved back, “I am not sick, Lu Lijun.”

“You can’t be sick or you know you won’t be able to step out,” Lu Lijun warned as he finished checking her temperature even after she didn’t want him to.

‘This kid, acting like an adult again,’ she thought.

“Then you should stop acting like a kid,” Lu Lijun commented and Jiang Yuyan gave him a narrowed eyes look

“If you are not sleepy anymore, get ready for breakfast,” Lu Lijun instructed..

“Huh? Did I sleep that long?” Jian Yuyan looked at the table clock to check the time and held her head, “It’s late.”

“It’s okay for kids to sleep till late so don’t worry,” Lu Lijun commented and Jiang Yuyan frowned, “Call me kid again and you will see.”

Keeping his poker face expressions, Lu Lijun asked as he went back to sit on the couch, “What can you do instead of frowning?”

Jiang Yuyan was arguing with him, but it was not serious. It was the first time after so long she saw him talking like before, and she liked it.

“You can go ahead, I’ll be downstairs soon,” instructed Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Lijun informed, “No need. The breakfast would be here in a while.”

When Jiang Yuyan returned from the room, she saw Lu Lijun was preparing the breakfast table after the servant brought it in the room.

Lu Lijun instructed her to sit in the chair. When they started eating, Jiang Yuyan looked around the room. It was exactly like before it used to be, but just one person was missing. Her throat felt choked as she thought about it and Lu Lijun passed her a glass of water.

“I miss him too,” said Lu Lijun as he ate while looking down at his dish.

Jiang Yuyan’s eyes turned moist, but she controlled herself from crying. Both continued eating silently with their hearts feeling heavy while trying hard to not show emotions to each other.

Once the breakfast was finished, Jiang Yuyan spoke, “I will be out again and I might be late.”

“Hmm!” Lu Lijun nodded, not asking her anything.

“Why do you never ask about where I am going?” Jiang Yuyan questioned as she always wondered about it.

“Because I know you won’t tell me,” Lu Lijun replied and Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say.

This little guy never troubled her with anything, and neither he ever questioned her. How much more mature he could act at such a young age, thought Jiang Yuyan.

After breakfast, Jiang Yuyan left the Lu Mansion in her car. She went to the secret mansion as she had one more important task to complete for that day.

Sitting in her room along with Xiao Min, San Zemin and the butler, she discussed her plan.

“Have you got what I have asked you to get,” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Yes boss,” San Zemin replied as he handed her over one brown envelope which had a Lu Corporation’s logo on it.

Jiang Yuyan opened the envelope and pulled out the stack of photographs from it. She went through it one by one but looked like she was not happy with it.

—

Back in top 5- mass release....

# 700 The Next Plan...

Guys, ranking went down. In the next 4 hours the voting will start again from zero so kindly vote. We have been to the top 5 before so it's not impossible to be there again.

Today MINI MASS RELEASE and the FOUR more chapters would be there after reset. So vote to get more chapters and keep the author motivated to write more.

---

In the envelope, there were pictures of Wen Tao with one woman. In those pictures, Wen Tao was holding the woman's hands, pecking on her cheeks, and they were talking to each other while smiling and laughing. In a few pictures, it showed that both entered the hotel room as Wen Tao held the woman closer intimately, but there was nothing out of the line.

"That's it?" Jiang Yuyan asked as she looked totally disappointed with the pictures.

Nodding hesitantly, San Zemin tried to speak, "Well, Boss..."

Jiang Yuyan put those pictures on the table. "I clearly said I want everything. Do you want me to explain the meaning of that everything, San Zemin?"

Xiao Min picked up the pictures from the table. Once he checked them all, Xiao Min spoke, "This won't be enough as Wen Tao is a thick skin person and such things won't affect him as he can turn it in the way he wants."

"San Zemin, did you hear what Xiao Min said?" Jiang Yuyan asked.

"We have pictures but those are not appropriate for the boss to see," San Zemin informed.

"Do you think of me as a teenage girl, San Zemin," Jiang Yuyan countered as she continued, "Even my own brother is shameless and hides nothing from me. I think you are forgetting who is the boss," Jiang Yuyan warned.

Not saying a word, San Zemin pulled out another envelope from his jacket and handed it over to Jiang Yuyan. She pulled out the pictures from it.

“This is what we need. When can we visit him?” Saying, Jiang Yuyan kept the pictures back on the table.

“Today he is in his home as today is his daughter’s birthday and he is planning the surprise party,” San Zemin informed.

Xiao Min picked the pictures from the table as he wanted to make sure if with these they could carry out their plan. He already expected to see something not so good but didn’t expect to see something out of the limit. It was fine if they all were men but their boss was a woman but she looked totally unaffected by seeing it. Now he could understand why San Zemin didn’t show their boss these pictures.

The butler already knew what there must be, so he didn’t look into the pictures and patted Xiao Min’s shoulder saying it’s okay, we need it.

“When can we leave?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Whenever the boss is ready.”

“Let’s go then.” Saying Jiang Yuyan stood up to go and San Zemin led her way while Xiao Min and the butler followed her.

Again the three cars were ready, one for Jiang Yuyan and Xiao Min, the other one for the butler and San Zemin and the third one for the two muscular build men to deal with in case if there was an emergency.

Soon they reached one bungalow at the expensive properties in the city. San Zemin stepped out of the car and went to the security guard at the gate, “Inform Mr. Wen Tao that Mrs. Lu is here to visit him.”

It was Wen Tao’s home where he was always present and the security was tight unlike Yun Shen’s farmhouse where barging inside was the piece of cake and getting those security guards to do what they wanted was a simple thing.

Moreover, their plan was not to harm anyone this time but to handle the thing with the simple talk.

“First Young master, we have a guest,” the guard informed as he showed Wen Tao the video from the gate.

Wen Tao was sitting in the living room while instructing the servants what to do for the surprise birthday party.

“I was expecting this. Ask them to wait for a while as I am busy,” said Wen Tao as he had an evil smile on the face.

The guard came back and informed San Zemin.

“Seems like your boss doesn’t understand the gentleman’s language,” commenting, San Zemin pulled out one envelope, “Give this to your boss and tell him this is the birthday gift for his daughter.”

The guard went inside again. Jiang Yuyan was sitting in the car, not minding what was happening outside. She knew San Zemin could handle the things and what she had to do was just to talk to the owner of this house.

“First young master, they sent this for you and said it’s a gift for young miss,” the guard passed on the envelope to Wen Tao.

“A gift? For my daughter?” Feeling puzzled, Wen Tao opened the envelope. Just as he looked at one picture, he felt nervous and instructed the guard, “Get them inside.”

Soon, they entered the main gate. San Zemin instructed his two men to stand outside, and they entered the house where Wen Tao was waiting for them in the living room.

“Welcome Mrs. Lu,” Wen Tao greeted as he stood up.

“It didn’t seem like we were actually welcome unless San Zemin used his sharp brain,” commented Jiang Yuyan as she sat on the couch opposite to Wen Tao, while the three men with her stood up behind her.

Jiang Yuyan was again wearing a simple black T-shirt and blue jeans paired with the cute sneakers. Just like Yun Shen, Wen Tao was surprised too as she looked different from how she looked in the meeting. Right now she looked like a young girl.

Wen Tao pulled out a forced smile and said, “I am curious to know, what thing brought Mrs. Lu here?”

Jiang Yuyan said nothing and Xiao Min, who was standing behind the sofa, stepped towards Wen Tao and handed him over the file, “We need your signature on it,”

Wen Tao went through the file and laughed, “Are you planning to blackmail me for this with just a few pictures which make no sense.”

Jiang Yuyan didn't react as she could see Wen Tao was shaking from inside, but he won't show it on his face.